

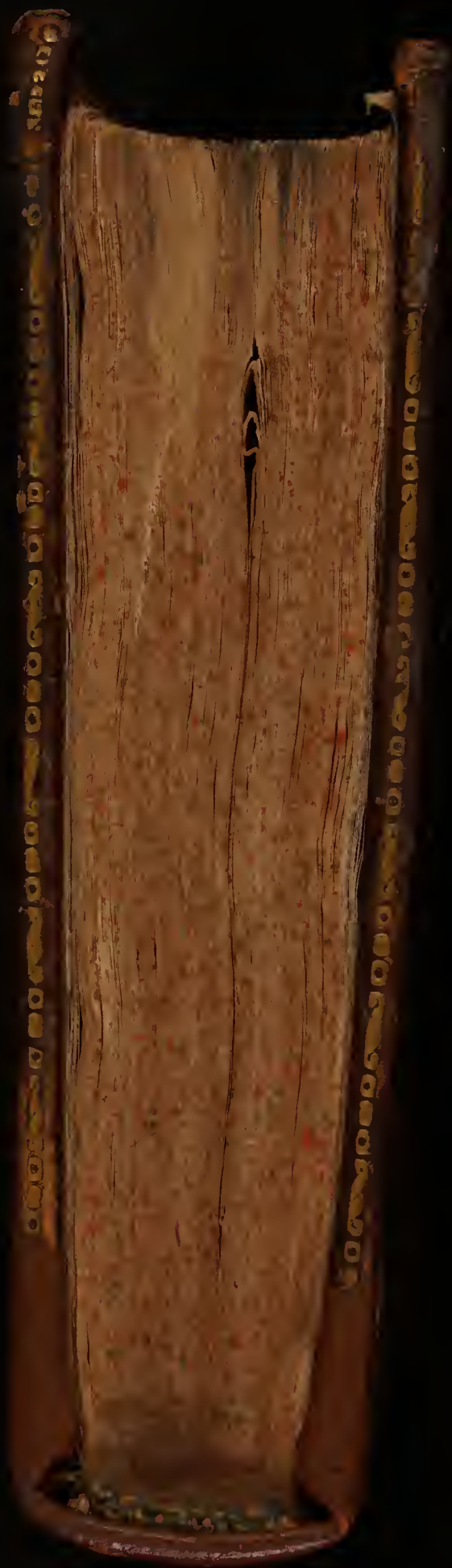


ACUGNA  
VOYAGES

1698







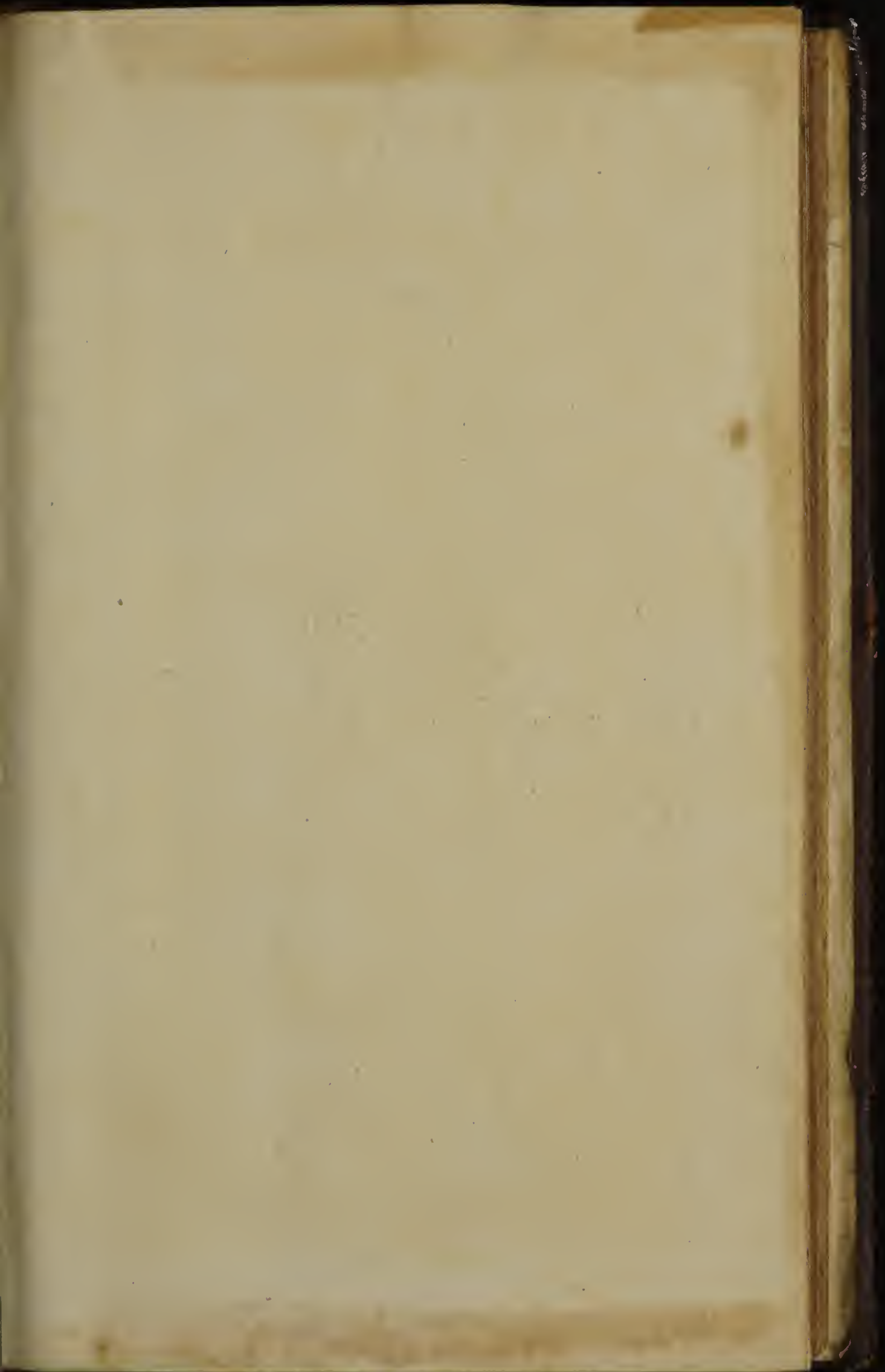
10,246/10

77

ACUNA (Christoval de) and others

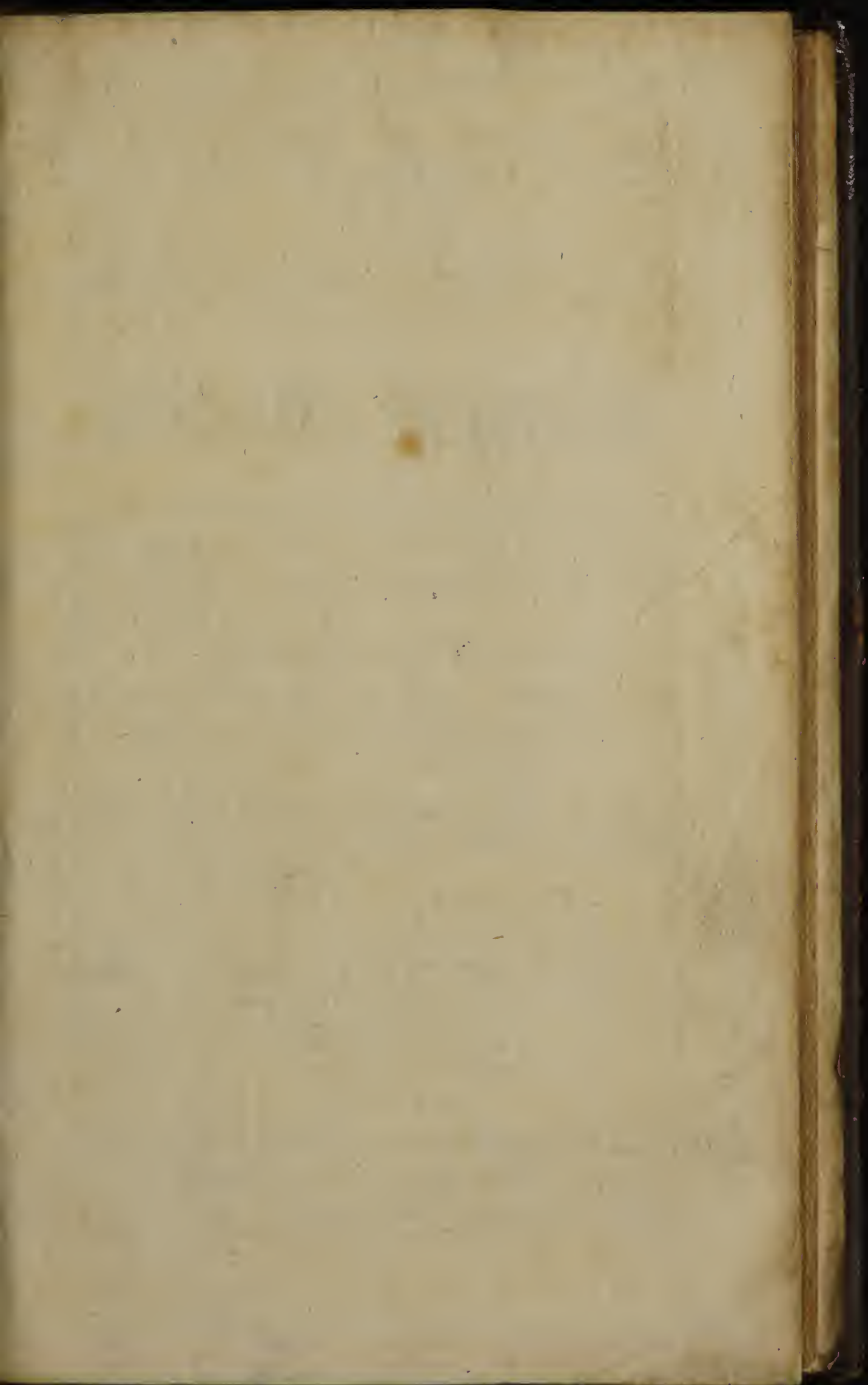


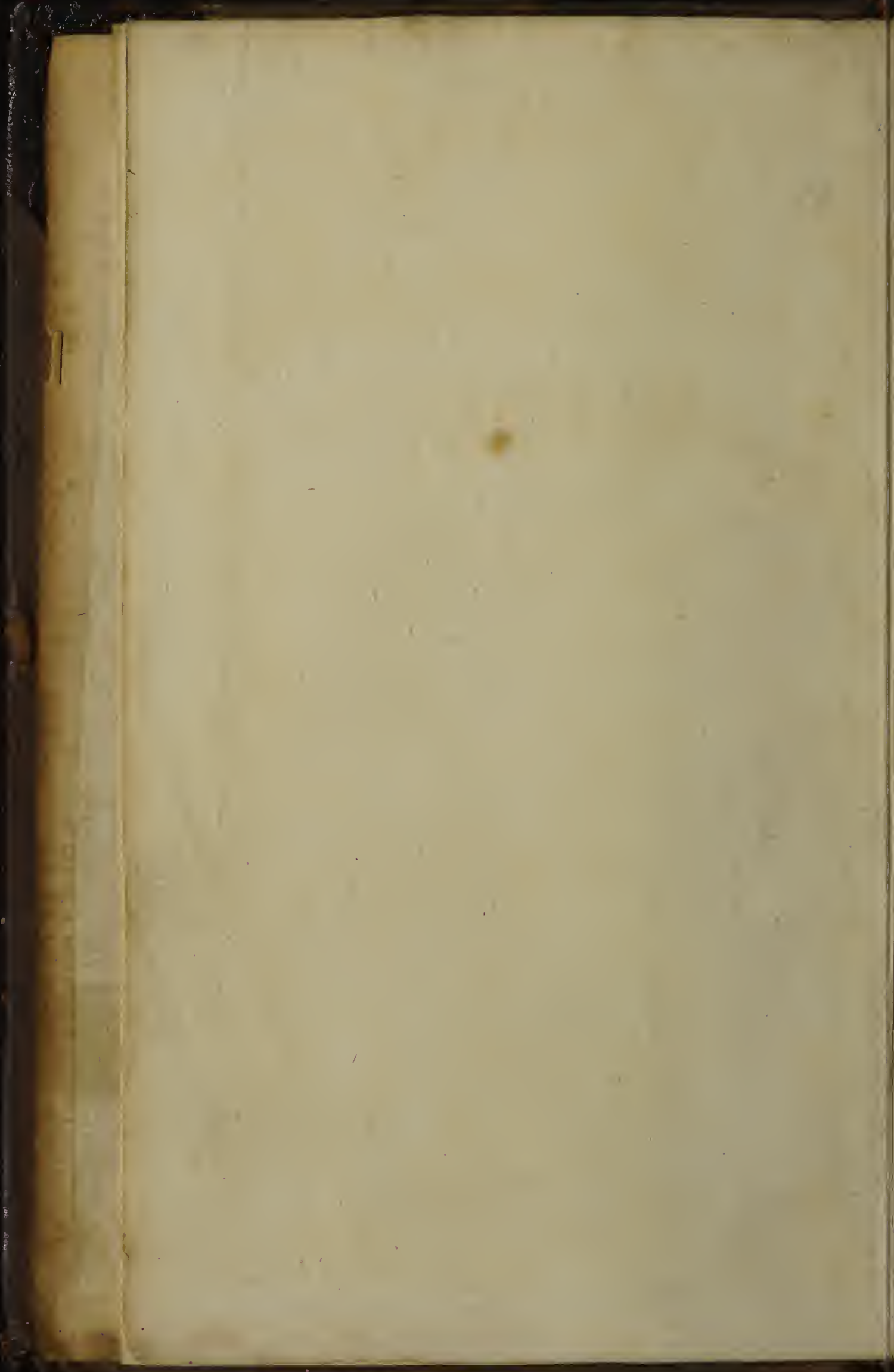
*George Willbraham*



Small vertical text on the left edge of the page, possibly a page number or binding mark.







VOYAGES  
AND  
DISCOVERIES  
IN

South-America.

The First up the River of *Amazons* to  
*Quito* in *Peru*, and back again to *Brazil*,  
perform'd at the Command of the King  
of *Spain*.

By CHRISTOPHER D'ACUGNA.

The Second up the River of *Plata*, and  
thence by Land to the Mines of *Potosi*.

By Monf. ACARETE.

The Third from *Cayenne* into *Guiana*, in search  
of the Lake of *Parima*, reputed the richest  
Place in the World.

By M. GRILLET and BECHAMEL.

---

Done into English from the Originals, being the on-  
ly Accounts of those Parts hitherto extant.

---

The whole illustrated with, Notes and Maps..

---

L O N D O N,

Printed for S. Buckley at the Dolphin over against  
St. Dunstan's Church in Fleetstreet. 1688.

## ADVERTISEMENT.

WHEN the Introduction was going into the Press, Advice came from *Lisbon* by the way of *Paris*, That the *Sieur de Ferolle*, Governour of *Cayenne*, being informed that the *Portuguez* were building a Fort on the North-side of the River of *Amazons*, to secure a rich *Silver Mine* which they had discover'd there, sent notice to the *Portuguez*, that they had invaded the *French King's Territories*, and therefore desir'd 'em to retire, that River being the Limits of the two Nations; but the *Portuguez* refusing to quit their Enterprize, *Monsieur de Ferolle* march'd against them, and attack'd 'em with so much Success, that those who guarded the Mine and the Fort were killed, or put to flight. How this Contest between these two Nations will be decided, is uncertain; but this is certain, that whatever Europeans first possess themselves of the *Isle of the Sun*, and the *Bosphore* or *Strait of the Amazone*, will command the Entrance into, and Passage up that noble River, and secure the Trade of it to themselves.



# INTRODUCTION.

**T**HE following Relations discovering some of the richest Parts of the World, not yet planted by the Europeans, and others but little known, worthy the perusal of the Curious, can hardly fail of a favourable Reception at this Juncture; for of all the Blessings of Peace, none appear more charming or profitable than Navigation and Commerce, especially to the English Nation, whose Genius is much bent upon Improvements at Sea, and Plantations abroad, which bring great Riches into the Kingdom, particularly those in America, where the Spaniards by their ill Conduct have given Opportunities to some of their Neighbours to put in for a share of the Wealth and Trade of that vast Tract of Land.

The frequent Sacking of their Towns and seizing of their Ships by the English, French, and Dutch, put Philip the Third upon searching out new ways of transporting the Treasures of Peru, Chili, and Granada into Spain; to which end (the Coasts about, and in the Gulph of Mexico being as well known as those in Europe) Orders were dispatched from the Court at Madrid to the Governours of Brazil and Peru to attempt the Navigation of the great River of *AMAZONS*, that if 'twere found practicable, the Gold, Silver, and other Merchandizes of Peru and the adjacent Countries might be safely and commodiously sent down to Para to be put on board the Galleons, which would lie less expos'd there, than at Cartagena, Porto Belo, or Vera Cruz, the Soundings of the Mouth of that River being unknown, and dangerous to Strangers. What Essays

A 2

were

were made pursuant to these Instructions, is best seen by the first Chapters of the ensuing Relation of F. Chr. d' Acugna, to which the Reader is referr'd, as the true Journal of the only Voyage upon, and Discovery of that noble River from the Source to the Mouth: 'twere needless to offer any other Recommendation of the Work, except some Account of the Author.

† Christopher d' Acugna was born at Burgos in Spain, Anno 1597. and entred into the Society of Jesus at 15 Years of Age. After some Years spent in Study, he went into America, and was Rector of the Jesuits College at Cuence under the Jurisdiction of Quito, when Peter Texeira the Portuguez General came thither from Para in Brazil up the River of Amazons. The Viceroy of Peru ordered our Author to embark with Texeira (who return'd by the same way he came) and to inform himself exactly in his Voyage of every thing that might enable him to give a satisfactory Account of the Amazone to the K. of Spain. Accordingly they departed from Quito Jan. 16. 1639. and arriv'd at Para Dec. 12. following. Thence he went into Spain, and presented to the King his Master an ample Relation of the said River; which was published at Madrid in 1641, and entituled \* Nuevo descubrimiento del gran Rio de las Amazonas, in 4°. He was sent to Rome in Quality of Provincial; came back to Spain honoured with the Title of Qualificator of the Inquisition, return'd agen into the West-Indies, and was alive at Lima in 1675. according to Father Sotwel. || 'Tis thought that the Revolutions of Portugal in 1641. which

---

† Nat. Sotvelli Bibliothec. Scriptor. Societ. Jesu. Romæ, 1677. Fol.

\* Nic. Antonii Biblioth. Hispan.

|| Dissert. de M. Villamont, and Hist. du Monde par Chevreau.

which occasion'd the Loss of all Brazil, and the Colony of Para, at the Mouth of the River of Amazons from the Spaniards, were the Cause of this Relation being suppress'd both in Spain and America, lest being of no use to the Spaniards, the Portuguez might make too great Advantages of it: Thus the Copies of it became so scarce, that the Editor of the French Translation says, there was not one single Book any where to be had, except that the Translator (M. Gomberville of the French Academy) made use of, and perhaps there might be another in the Vatican Library; for Philip the Fourth had taken all possible care to get and destroy most of the printed Copies in Europe and the West-Indies.

† In the Year 1655 the Count de Pagan, Master of the Artillery, presented to Mazarine Proposals for conquering and planting this great River; but the Cardinal being involv'd in Domestick Troubles, was not at leisure to push on the Enterprize, tho it had been first started by that eminent Minister himself. This Discourse of Monsieur de Pagan is extracted for the most part out of Acugna, and is a sort of Paraphrase upon him, full of Digressions, and not comparable to the Original it self, which is more uniform and authentick, containing abundance of remarkable Observations, not mentioned by Pagan nor any other Copist whatsoever. The Cardinal was once resolv'd to plant five several Colonies; the first in the Isle of the Sun, to guard the best Entrance into the Mouth of the Amazone; the second on the Bosphore or Strait, to keep the Passage; the third on the Points of the Rio Negro; the fourth on the Zuanes near the Golden Mines; the last on the Mouth of the Maragnon, to watch over the Spanish Frontiers on that side  
of

---

† Description de la Riviere & Pais des Amazones per M. Le Comte de Pagan 12°. Paris 1655.

of the Andes: This was the Plan of his Design. The many Difficulties of entering the Mouth, and getting into the true Channel of this River of Amazons, have often discouraged the Spaniards, English, and Dutch from attempting to trade in it, whereas upon Practice and Experience it might prove as navigable as most of the great Rivers of the World, whose Mouths are generally encumbred either with Sands, Flats, Isles, or impetuous Currents, which after a few Trials become familiar. The way propounded to the Cardinal was this. First shun the strong Currents, by passing aside into 2 Degrees of South Latitude; then steer up agen by the Coast of Brazil at 30 min. South Lat. double the Point of Zapparara, and sail to the South-west; after that follow the Coast of the Province of Para, and pass the Channel of the Isle of the Sun at 1 Deg. 15 Min. South Lat. and 26 Leagues from the main Sea; lastly, sail Westward, leave the side of Para, and keep the same Latitude to gain the Bank-side of Curupa, and there enter into the best Road of this River at 2 deg. S. Lat. and 30 Leagues beyond Curupa, which is but 1 deg. 30 min. on the same side of the Line.

Since that time the French being Masters of the Isle of Cayenne (which they have fortified and cultivated) to the North of the Amazone, have not (nor any other Nation that we know of) planted any Countrey on this River, but have contented themselves with making Journeys into Guiana, particularly in search of the vast Lake of Parima, which the Spaniards have long fancied to be \* the richest Place in the World, calling it the Kingdom of Dorado, whither all the great Families of Peru retir'd, and built the  
Golden

---

\* Lopez de Gomara, also Hakluyt, and Purchas in their Collections concerning Guiana.



Golden City of † Manoa. What grounds the Spaniards went upon in their Attempts to find out these Places at a mighty Expence of Blood and Treasure, will best appear by the following Travels of M. Grillet and Bechamel, who went beyond the suppos'd Longitudes of these Places, and could not learn the least Tidings of them from any of the Indian Nations, tho the Circumference of the Lake alone is generally reckon'd to be above 1500 Miles. 'Tis true, some may object that this doth not wholly destroy the common Geography of that Country, and give this plausible Argument, that the simple innocent Indians are grown so extremely sensible of the cruel Dispositions of the Europeans, that they begin now to conceal industriously every thing from them, and lead them out of the way, lest they should fix in their Country and exercise their Barbarities over them; \* for by a modest Computation, the number of Americans murder'd in cold Blood exceeds that of the People now living in Europe. To this Journey a short Description of Guiana was thought fit to be annex'd, being drawn up by M. Gomberville out of Original Papers for the Instruction and Use of Marechal D'Estreade, Vice-roy of all the French Plantations in America. The Notes are from another hand, perhaps M. Villamont, who was pleas'd to divert himself with such sort of Papers.

It remains now that we give some Account of what Voyages have been made up the River De la Plata.

|| In the Year 1512. Joannes Dias de Solis ( and  
again

---

† Herrera, and John de Laet speak doubtfully of these places.

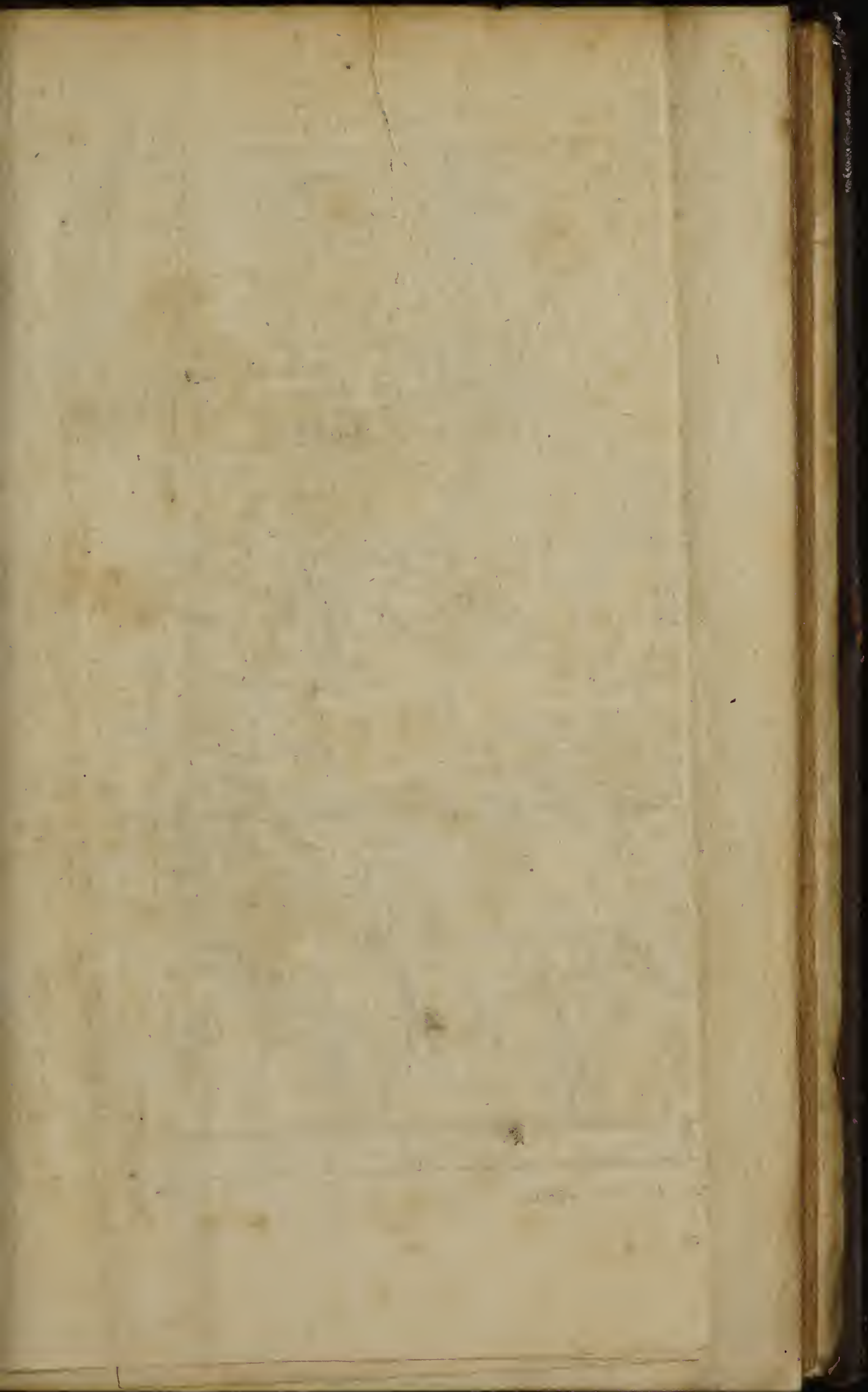
\* Barth. de las Casas (obispo de las Chiapas) Hist. dela destrucion de los Indios, Venet. 1630. Also Hist. novi orbis per Hier. Benzon. And the Comment. Reales delos Yncas, Reyes del Peru. fol. || Pet. Martyr. Decad. 3. cap. 10.

again in 1515.) was the first Discoverer of this Plate or Silver River, wherein he and most of his Relations spent their Lives and Estates. || An. 1526. Sebastian Cabota, a Venetian by his Father, but born at Bristol in England, went above 120 Leagues up this River, and staid in it above 15 Months. An. 1527. Diego Garcias a Portuguez, made further Discoveries in it; but nothing more was done till nine Years after, when Pedro de Mendoza return'd with 12 Ships and 1000 Men. And about the Year 1540. \* Alvarez Cabeza de Vacca went and peopled the Provinces to some purpose. At first they found much Gold and Silver, with infinite numbers of different Nations (soon lessened under the Tyranny and Devastations of their new Masters) the Country prodigiously fertile, the Rivers overflowing every Year upon the Stationary Rains, as the Amazone and Orinogue in Guiana, and as the Nile and the Niger in Africa. Since then the Spaniards have been possessors of this part of America, and no Strangers have pass'd up this River to Potosi to give us any exact Relation thereof; this of M. Acarete is the latest, and much more copious and particular than that of Martin del Barco, or the Dutch Journal translated from a Manuscript by J. de Laet in his Hist. Ind. besides, what is here related by Acarete of the Mines of Potosi is wholly new, and merits our notice. The way he went seems to be a shorter and a safer Passage to and from the Mines of Potosi than that usually practis'd by Arica, Lima, Panama and Porto-Belo, especially now the Boucaniers are so well acquainted with those Seas and Countries; but he has given a pretty good reason why the Spaniards don't open a Trade that way.

---

|| Ant. Galvanos's Discoveries, 4<sup>o</sup> and Fol.

† Herrera D. 6. l. 3. c. 18.





*A Relation of the Great River  
of AMAZONS in South-America.*

Containing all the Particulars of  
Father Christopher d' Acugna's Voy-  
age, made at the Command of the  
King of Spain.

Taken from the Spanish Original of the  
said Chr. d' Acugna, Jesuit.

---

CHAP. I.

*Of the Country in which the River of Ama-  
zons is situated. Of its Reputation, and  
of the first Discoveries the Spaniards made  
of it.*

**T**HE Spaniards were no sooner be-  
come Masters of that Part of  
*America*, which is now called  
*Peru*, but they extremely desir'd  
to make a Discovery of the great River  
of *Amazons*, which some Geographers  
through a vulgar Error have call'd the  
B River

River of *Maragnon*. They were induc'd to attempt this not only by the Account they had receiv'd of the Fertility of the Soil, and of the Riches of the People along that famous River, but also because they had very good Reasons to believe that it took its Course from the West to the East, and that receiving all the Rivers that descend from the Mountains of *Peru*, it was a kind of Canal through which there was a Passage from the Southern to the Northern Sea. Upon these Conjectures some Persons undertook to go in search of this River, but to no purpose. Others afterward made the like Essay, but with no better Success. At length in the Year 1539. *Gonzalles Pizarre* being made Governor of the Province of *Quito* by the Marques *Francis Pizarre* his Brother, who was Governor of *Peru*, put himself in an Equipage to go to his Government, and from thence to pass on to the Conquest of the Country of *Cannelle*. He got together two hundred Foot and a hundred Horse, partly at his own Charge, and partly at the Expence of some that accompanied him in this Expedition, which cost above fifty thousand \* Castilians of Gold. Being arriv'd at *Quito*, he order'd all necessary

\* A Castilian  
is about 5 s.  
6 d. English.

ry Provisions to be made for his Journey, took a great number of Indian Slaves to carry the Baggage, and set forward at the end of *December* in the Year 1539, with four hundred Spaniards and four thousand Indians. He order'd for the Subsistence of his Men four thousand Sheep, Cows, and Swine to be driven along with 'em; and taking his Course directly Northward, he enter'd into the Country of the *Quixos*, where the Conquests of the *Yncas* of *Peru* ended. This Province is forty Leagues in length, and twenty in breadth; and was inhabited by a People that never us'd to dwell together in Towns or Villages like those of *Peru*, but liv'd in a straggling manner scatter'd up and down the Country.

---

C H A P. II.

*The way Gonzalles Pizarre took in passing out of Quito, and the Difficulties he met with in his Journey.*

**T**HE March of our Adventurers was retarded, not only by the Opposition they had from the People of the Country, who disputed their Passage, but also

by continual Rains and Earthquakes so violent, that many Houses were overturn'd, and deep Breaches made in the Earth before 'em, together with such terrible Storms and Claps of Thunder, that any one but *Gonzalles Pizarre* would have abandon'd such an Enterprize as seem'd to be oppos'd both by Heaven and Earth. However he with his Men did not give over their March for all this bad Weather, but cross'd the Province of the *Quixos*, till they came to the foot of some high Mountains all cover'd with Snow, which make a part of those which the Spaniards call the *Cordeliers*, and which bound the Province of the *Quixos* on the North. Tho the Rains still continued they resolv'd to pass over the Mountains, but were not far advanc'd before the Rain turn'd into a Snow so thick and cold, that many of the Indians were kill'd by it. The Spaniards were likely to have undergone the same fate, if they had continued their March as they began: They concluded that nothing but Expedition could save 'em from the Rigor of the Cold, and therefore left all the Cattle they had with them, and lighted themselves of the rest of their Provisions and Baggage, hoping they should find enough on t'other side of  
the



the Mountains. When they were got over them, they enter'd into a Valley call'd *Zumaque*, which is a hundred Leagues from *Quito* by the account of good Geographers; there they found abundance of Provisions and Refreshments, and continued there two Months to acquaint themselves with the Country, and to see if they could make any advantage of it. But this Place not answering the great hopes they had conceiv'd of their Adventure, *Pizarre* parted from *Zumaque* with sixty good Souldiers to discover the Country of *Cannelle*; but in pursuing the Course he had taken towards the North, he found the way so rough and mountainous, that he was constrain'd to change his Road; he therefore turn'd directly to the East, and after some few days march, enter'd into that famous Country call'd by the Inhabitants *Cannelle*, from certain great Trees, like Olive-Trees, that are call'd so in that Place.

---

 C H A P. III.

*The Countries near the River of Amazons  
discover'd by Gonzalles Pizarre.*

**H***Errera* the Spanish Historian says, *Pizarre* exercis'd the greatest Cruelty imaginable on the Inhabitants of these Regions, infomuch that he gave Men to be eaten alive by his Dogs. This engag'd all the Country to put themselves in Arms against him, so that he was oblig'd to encamp himself as in an Enemy's Country: And his Cruelties, together with the Despair he was in of ever being able to find what he was seeking after, had like to have put an end to his Enterprize at once. He was encamp'd on the Bank of a River, which swell'd so much in one Night, that if the Sentinels, who perceiv'd the Water was apace getting ground of 'em, had not warn'd 'em of their Danger, they had been all drown'd; but at the Alarm they gave 'em they soon secur'd themselves by making towards the Cottages of the wild People, and *Pizarre* resolv'd to return to *Zumaque*, not knowing what other course to take.

take. From thence he proceeded again with all his Men, and after a March of four Leagues, he met with a great Village call'd *Ampua*, govern'd by a *Cacique*, and found a great number of the Inhabitants in a posture of Defence expecting their Enemy. But there was another and a greater Obstacle in his way than this *Cacique* and all his Troops, and that was a River so wide and deep, that he could have no thoughts of venturing to swim over it. He could therefore find no better Expedient than to enter into a Treaty with the People of the Country, and to desire the help of their Canoos to cross this River. The *Cacique* receiv'd this Proposal with great Civility, offer'd 'em what they ask'd, and gave 'em as many of those little Boats as they desir'd, and *Pizarre* made 'em a return of a great many little Spanish Toys by way of Requitall. This *Cacique* having receiv'd Advice of the ill Treatment many of his Neighbours had receiv'd from the Spaniards, thought of nothing more than how to get rid of them: And to deliver himself from the danger of the Company of such bad Guests, endeavour'd to make 'em believe there were great Riches to be found among the People that dwelt

upon this River some days Journey lower. *Pizarre* both by his Actions, and by the Mouth of his Guides, who were his Interpreters, return'd him Thanks for his Courtesy; but finding no appearance of those pretended Riches, he return'd to *Zumaque*, very much dissatisfied with his Expedition. However, he had too much Courage to return back to *Quito* just as he came; he had a mind therefore to attempt some great Exploit, and by the Discovery of some other *Peru*, to render himself as considerable as the Marques of *Pizarre* his elder Brother: He open'd his Mind to *Francis Oreillane*, a Gentleman of *Truxillo* in *Spain*, who was come to join him in the Valley of *Zumaque* with fifty Troopers well appointed: He very much encourag'd his Design; and tho the Rainy Season was not yet past, that did not hinder him from advancing forward; he left his little Army at *Zumaque*, and having taken a hundred effective Soldiers, and some Indians for Guides, and to carry Provisions, he march'd directly to the East.

---

## CHAP. IV.

*The first News he receiv'd of this famous River, and of the Riches of the People that dwell near it.*

**E**ither the Ignorance of his Guides, or the Hatred they bare him engaged him in a Country all full of Mountains, Forests and Torrents, so that he was necessitated to make Ways where he found none, and to open himself a Passage through the Woods with Hatchets, where none had ever gone before. At length after many days March he pierc'd through as far as the Province of *Coca*. The *Cacique* of which Province came before him, and offer'd him all the Accommodations the Country afforded for his Refreshment. *Gonzalles* promis'd himself much from this kind Entertainment, and by the Assistance of his Guides enter'd into Conversation with the *Cacique*. He inform'd him that the Country through which he had pass'd, which was so full of Mountains, Forests and Brooks, was the only Passage he could have taken to come thither; that it was extremely difficult to get through it, but  
that

that if he were willing to embark on the River he saw before him, or to follow it by Land, he might assure himself, that along the Banks of another River much greater than this, he should find a Country abounding with all things, whose Inhabitants were cover'd with Plates of Gold. There was no need of saying any thing more to *Pizarre* to incite him to any kind of Enterprize; who presently sent two of his Guides to *Zumaque* with Orders to his Officers to come and join him, who march'd immediately, and surmounting all the Difficulties of the way, arriv'd much fatigued to the Town of *Coca*. *Pizarre* having rested 'em some few days, and afterwards put them in Battalia before the *Cacique*, who was much terrified at them; he amass'd almost all the Provisions of his whole Province to make a Present of them to *Pizarre*, that by this Magnificence he might civilly acquit himself of his new Acquaintance, who was more impatient of his stay than the other; and the next Morning having filed his Troops along the River, he took his leave of the *Cacique*, presenting him with a fine Sword, and put himself at the head of his Cavalry, and followed the pleasant Course of the River. This good way  
did

did not last long, but they had Rivulets to swim over, must go up-hill and down-hill in uneven ways, and march forty three days without finding any Provision for his Troops, or any Fords or Canoos by which to pass the River.

---

CHAP. V.

*The Discovery which Pizarre made of the River of Coca, and Oreillane's floating on this River by Pizarre's order, and so entering into the River of Amazons.*

**T**His long March having mightily fatigued our Travellers, they were stop'd by a very surprizing sight: The River was press'd by two Rocks, one on each side its Passage, at no more than twenty foot distance from one another; and the Water going through this Strait, precipitated it self into a Valley, and made a Leap of two hundred Fathom. Here it was that *Pizarre* caus'd that famous Bridg to be made for his Troops to pass over, which is so much boasted of by the Spanish Historians. But finding the Way not at all better on the other side, and their Provision growing  
more

more and more scarce every day, *Pizarre* resolv'd to make a Brigantine to carry by Water all his sick Men, Provisions, Baggage, and a hundred thousand Livres in Gold which they had got amongst 'em. This was no small Difficulty, but Industry and Necessity surmounted it; and the Vessel being finished, *Pizarre* embark'd all in it that hindred his March, and gave the Command of it to *Francis Oreillane* with fifty Souldiers, giving him exprefs Order not to part far from him, but to come every Night to the Camp. He observ'd this Order exactly, till his General seeing all his Men were much pinch'd with Hunger, commanded him to go and seek some Provisions and Cottages, where his Men might be refreshed. *Oreillane* had no sooner receiv'd his Orders, but he launched out into the middle of the River; and the Rapidity of the Stream carry'd him as fast as he could wish, for he made above a hundred Leagues in three days without the use of either Sails or Oars: The Current of *Coca* carried him into another River which was much larger, but nothing near so swift; he made his Observation of it one whole day, and seeing that the farther he went down, the more the River

ver



ver widen'd, he did not doubt but this was that great River which had been so often and in vain sought after. The Joy he conceiv'd at his good Fortune so transported him, that it made him quite forget himself; so that he thought of nothing but the Enjoyment of this good Success; and trampling upon his Duty, Oath, Fidelity and Gratitude, he had now nothing in view but how to bring about the Enterprize he was contriving.

---

CHAP. VI.

*Oreillane hoping for an extraordinary Success from the Discovery of this River; and being willing to have the sole Glory of it, leaves his General, and makes himself the Head of this Enterprize.*

**T**O this end *Oreillane* perswaded his Companions that the Country whither they were arriv'd, was not the same with that which their General had described; that it had not that great Plenty the *Cacique* had told him he should find at the joining of the two Rivers; that they must certainly float along farther to find that pleasant and fertile Country,

try, where they might store themselves with Provisions; and besides that, they all saw there was no likelihood of getting up this River again, which indeed they came down in three days, but, as he believ'd, could not make the same way back again in the space of a whole Year; that it was much more reasonable to wait for their Company on this new River; and that in the mean time it was necessary for 'em to go seek Provisions. Thus concealing his Design, he hoisted up the Sails, and abandoning himself to the Wind, to his Fortune, and to his Resolution, he thought of nothing but of pursuing the course of the River, till he should discover it quite to the Sea. His Companions were startled at the manner of his putting in execution the Design he had been proposing to 'em, and thought themselves oblig'd to tell him that he went beyond the Orders of his General; and that in the extreme want he was in, they ought to carry him the little Provision they could find; and that he had given sufficient Evidence that he had some ill Design, because he had neglected to leave two Canoos at the Bank of the two Rivers, as the General had appointed him, for his Army to pass over in. These Re-  
mon<sup>s</sup>

monstrances were made to him chiefly by a Dominican Frier nam'd *Gaspar de Carvalho*, and by a young Gentleman of *Badajos* in *Spain*, call'd *Fernand Sanches de Vargas*. The Consideration they had for these two Persons occasion'd a Division of the Company in this little Vessel into two Parties; and from Words they were like to have fallen to Blows, but that *Oreillane* stifling their Gratitude by his Diffimulation, by fair Protestations and great Promises appeas'd this Disorder. By means of the Friends he had in the Vessel he gain'd most of the Souldiers that were against him to his side; and seeing the two Heads of the other Party left almost alone, he caus'd *Fernand Sanches de Vargas* to be set ashore, leaving him quite alone, without Victuals and without Arms, in a dismal Wilderness, bounded on one side with high Mountains, and with a River on the other: He had more Prudence than to treat the Frier after the same manner, yet he gave him to understand, that it was not for him to penetrate any more into the Pretensions of his Commander, unless he had a mind to be severely chastis'd: After this he continued his Voyage; and the next day being willing to know if he might depend upon  
all

all that were with him for the success of his Resolutions, he let 'em know that he aspir'd to a much higher pitch of Dignity than what he might have obtain'd in the Service of *Pizarre*, that he ow'd every thing to himself and his King; and that his Fortune having as it were led him by the hand, to the greatest and most desirable Discovery that was ever made in the *Indies*, namely, the great River upon which they were sailing, which coming out of *Peru*, and running from West to East, was the finest Channel in the new World, through which one might pass from the Northern to the Southern Sea: that he could not without betraying them all, and without ravishing from them the Fruits of their Voyage and Industry, make others share in a Favour which Heaven had reserv'd for them alone. That as for himself, his Design was to go into *Spain*, to beg of his Catholick Majesty the Government of this great Country all along this noble River; he promis'd them they should be all Governours of Castles and Towns, and have other Recompences proportionate to their Valour and Generosity; that they should only follow him; that they knew him well; that he was not uncapable of the  
Post

Post he design'd to ask of the King, and that it was certainly due to him for having made a Discovery of the Country. That as for the Oath he had taken to *Pizarre*, he disingag'd himself of it; that he was resolv'd to be commanded by him no longer; that he renounc'd the Power he had receiv'd from him, and would have no other Authority nor Command but what he ask'd of them, and what they would give him in naming him chief Commander, under the King their Master, in the Discovery of this great River.

---

CHAP. VII.

*Oreillane gives his Name to this River.  
The Change of the Name he had given it  
by a Fable himself compos'd, to render his  
Discovery the more famous.*

**H**IS Harangue was followed with a general Consent to make him the Head of this Enterprize. He began to use his Authority in giving his Name to this great and famous River, and not content to know the course of it, he was desirous of discovering the Country it water'd. He therefore went ashore to get

C

Provi-

Provisions, and to acquaint himself with the Inhabitants: But he found the People able to defend their Bread, and had several Battels with the Natives, who let him know they were not without Courage; nay, they were so stout and resolute in the defence of their Country, that the Women mix'd themselves with the Men in the Battel, and seconded them with admirable Bravery both in shooting of Arrows, and in standing their Ground. 'Twas this that gave occasion to *Oreillane*, that he might render his Discovery more considerable and glorious, to tell that he had enter'd into a Country of vast Extent along this River, which was govern'd by *Amazons*, a sort of Women who had no Husbands, who destroy'd all their Male-Children; and who came arm'd at a certain time every Year in a Body to the Frontiers of their Neighbours, there to choose themselves Paramours, to prevent the Extinction of so extraordinary a Nation: And this was the reason why this River he had first call'd after his own Name, was since call'd the River of *Amazons*. However *Oreillane* pursued his Course with a great deal of Success, and the more he advanc'd, the more all things seem'd to concur to prosper his Infidelity. As he  
went

went farther down, he found other People, not so warlike and savage as the others: They receiv'd him with a great deal of Civility, and admir'd all that he and his Company did, and all that they had, their Persons, their Clothes, their Arms, their Vessel, and every thing else: They look'd upon 'em as a sort of extraordinary Men, were willing to enter into an amicable Treaty with 'em, and gave 'em as much Provision as they could desire.

---

CHAP. VIII.

*Oreillane passes out of this River by an Arm that goes into the Sea near the North-Cape. His Voyage into Spain to beg of the King the Conquest and Government of this Country. His unfortunate Return, and his End worthy of his Treachery.*

**O***reillane* finding himself in a Post so favourable to his Designs, stop'd here for some time, and caus'd another Brigantine to be made larger than the former, because they were too much crowded in it. He continued there as long as was necessary to inform himself

well of the Country; and having taken his Farewel of the courteous Indians, he fet sail. After several days Voyage, he happily came to the place where this River goes out into the Sea, and sail'd out with it; and taking good notice of the Places necessary to be observ'd for his Return, he coasted along a Cape, now call'd *the North Cape*, 200 Leagues from the Island *La Trinidad*, and sail'd directly thither, where he bought a Vessel, in which he pass'd into *Spain*, and presented himself to the Emperor *Charles V.* at *Vailladolid*; he so charm'd the Emperor with the agreeable recital of his Adventures, and with the fair Promises he made, that he obtain'd three Ships of him in which to return from whence he came, with Orders to build Forts and Houses in those places which he should find most commodious, and to take possession of the Country in the Name of this Prince. His Dispatches were soon given, but the execution of 'em was very tedious; for he was above seven Years at the Court of *Spain* before he could put himself in a condition to sail. About the end of the Year 1549, he imbarck'd with all his Men; but was no sooner got to the Latitude of the *Canaries*, but a contagious Distem-



Distemper passing from one of his Vessels into the others, took off part of his Soldiers, a considerable number of 'em was carried off soon after by the same Infection, tho he was got no further than *Cape-Verd*, when he was advis'd to return back to *Spain*: He was so rash notwithstanding as to continue his Voyage, and to promise himself the sight of the River of *Amazons* for all this: And indeed he did see it, and came to the Mouth of it with his Vessels; but finding he wanted Men, he order'd 'em all to come aboard his own Ship, and quitted the two others. But the number of his Men daily diminishing, having built two Barks in an Island where he had made some stay, he only reserv'd himself one of them, of a pretty large size, and several times attempted to get up higher into the River. He was, in fine, necessitated to yield to his Fortune, which had forsaken him, and suffer'd him to go to the place of his Ruin. He was cast on the Coasts of *Caracas*, and from thence upon a certain Island call'd *St. Marguerite*, where he lost the last of his Men; and dying as well with Despair as Sickness, he made *Charles V.* lose the great Hopes he had conceiv'd of so daring an Enterprize.

## CHAP. IX.

This Discovery thus begun in 1540, remain'd imperfect till the Year 1560, when a Spanish Gentleman nam'd Orsua, ask'd leave of the Vice-Roy of Peru to make this Discovery. His Equipage, and the beginning of his Voyage, and his parting from Quito.

THE ill Success of Oreillane's Voyage cool'd the ardent Desire the Spaniards had for the Discovery of the River of *Amazons*; and it seem'd quite extinguish'd by the Civil Wars of *Peru*, till the Marquess de *Caguete* being Vice-Roy of that Kingdom, a Gentleman of *Navarre*, nam'd *Peter de Orsua*, who had always entertain'd Thoughts worthy of his great Courage, turn'd his Designs on this great River, and believ'd he should be more fortunate than *Oreillane*: He presented himself to the Vice-Roy, and propos'd his Design to him; who being well acquainted with his Merit, commended his Resolution, and was perswaded, that if so difficult a matter should succeed, it must be by the Conduct of so brave and wise a Commander. He immediately dispatch'd all necessary Orders for him, and caus'd a  
Publi-

Publication of his Attempt to be made throughout the Kingdom. Most of the Gentry came to offer their Service to *Orsua*; who was so much in every one's Esteem, that there was no Souldier so old, but would leave his Retirement with Pleasure to serve under so excellent a General. His chief trouble was to return his Thanks to so many of 'em as he could not take along with him: he made choice of such amongst 'em as were most fit for his purpose; and to carry on the famous Conquest he design'd, he made all necessary Provisions both of Ammunition and Victuals, to which all the Lords and the Inhabitants of the Towns contributed with a great deal of Freedom and Liberality, being well perswaded that *Orsua* had Qualities that well deserv'd to be oblig'd. He parted from *Cusco* in 1560, with the Acclamations and good Wishes of all the Inhabitants of that Place; he was attended with above seven hundred choice Souldiers, and with a considerable number of very good Horses. Being well vers'd in the Map of *Peru*, and having for some time been laying the Scheme of his Journey, he march'd directly to the Province of *Mosilones*, first to meet the River *Moyabamba*, by which he was sure of entring into the River of *Amazons*.

## CHAP. X.

*The Tragical End of Orsua by the Revolt of two of his Officers, who were fallen in love with their General's Lady. The yet more Tragical End of those two Rebels one after t'other. And the Cruelty of one of them against his own Daughter.*

ONE would have hop'd an Attempt so wisely laid, and so universally approv'd, should have had a happy Issue: Yet never was any Project more unsuccessful; for *Orsua* had taken with him one *Don Fernand de Gusman*, a young Man who was lately come from *Spain*, and another more advanc'd in Years, named *Lopez Daguirre* of *Biscay*, a little ill-favour'd Man, whom he had made his Ensign. These two Wretches fell in Love with their General's Lady, whose Name was *Agnes*, and who had accompanied her Husband in all his Travels; and thinking they had a favourable occasion to satisfy their Lust and Ambition together, engag'd *Orsua's* Troops to revolt, and assassinated him. After this Tragical Fact the Traitors who committed it, who to the number of seven or eight were in a strict Confederacy, elected

*Don*

Don Fernand de Gusman for their King; whose Mind was vain enough to receive that Title which became him so little: But he did not enjoy it long; for those very Persons that had given him the Quality of King, gave him his Death's Wound too, and *Daguirre* succeeded him, who made himself King, notwithstanding the Remonstrances of others: And naming himself the Rebel and Traitor, he gave all those he had gain'd to his Party to understand, that he intended to make himself Master of *Guiana*, of *Peru*, and of the new Kingdom of *Grenada*, and promis'd 'em all the Riches of those great Kingdoms. His Reign was so bloody and barbarous, that the like Tyranny was scarce ever heard of in the World: Therefore the Spaniards to this day call him the Tyrant. However he commanded *Orsua's* Vessels, and went down the River *Coca* into the *Amazone*, hoping to obtain one of those Kingdoms, and to make a considerable Progress into it. But having enter'd the *Amazone*, he was not able to master the Current of it, and so was constrained to suffer himself to be carried down to the Mouth of a River above a thousand Leagues from the place where he imbark'd, and was driven into the great Channel which goes to the North-

North-Cape, being the same way *Oreillane* had taken before him. Going out of the *Amazon*, he came to the Island of *St. Marguerite*, which is to this day call'd the Tyrant's Port; there he kill'd *Don Irean de Villa Andrada*, Governour of the Island, and *Don John Sermiento* his Father. After their Death, with the Assistance of one *John Burq*, he made himself Master of the Island, plunder'd it intirely, and there committed unheard-of Barbarities. He kill'd all that oppos'd him, and past from thence to *Cumana*, where he exercis'd the same Cruelties: He after that desolated all those Coasts that bear the Name of *Caracas*, and all the Provinces along the Rivers *Venezuella* and *Baccho*. He then came to *St. Martha*, where he put all to the Sword, and enter'd the new Kingdom of *Grenada*, designing to march from thence through *Quito* into *Peru*. In this Kingdom he was forc'd to a Battel, in which he was utterly defeated, and put to flight, but all Ways being stop'd, he found he must perish; and therefore begins his Tragedy with a sort of Barbarity without Example.

He had a Daughter by his Wife *Mendoza*, that had follow'd him in his Expeditions, and whom he lov'd entirely. Daughter (says he to her) I must kill thee: I de-

design'd to have plac'd thee on a Throne, but since Fortune opposes it, I am not willing thou shouldst live to suffer the Shame of becoming a Slave to my Enemies, and of being call'd the Daughter of a Tyrant and a Traitor. Die, my Child, die by the Hand of thy Father, if thou hast not Courage enough to die by thy own. She surpriz'd at this Discourse, desir'd him at least to give her some time to prepare for Death, and to beg of God the Pardon of her Sins: This he granted; but thinking her too tedious in her Devotion, as she was praying upon her Knees he shot her through the Body with a Carbine; but having not kill'd her out-right, he stuck his Dagger into her Heart. She falling down at the Stroke, cry'd, Ah, Father, 'tis enough!

Soon after her Death he was taken and carried Prisoner to the Island *La Trinidad*, where he had a considerable Estate. His Process was made, and he condemn'd to be quarter'd; he was publickly executed, his Houses raz'd to the Ground, and the places where they stood sow'd with Salt, as may be seen to this day.

## CHAP. XI.

*This Discovery by these sad Accidents continued thus without any farther Advancement, from the Year 1560 to 1606, when two Jesuits ventur'd to go and preach the Gospel along this River, and were there martyr'd. Many other Attempts form'd since by great Persons without Success.*

THE unhappy Issue of these two Enterprizes abated the Desires of others after this Discovery to that degree, that the last Age past without any farther knowledg of this great River: But our Age has been more happy, and we have seen this great Design perfectly executed in our days. In 1606, and 1607, two Fathers of the Jesuits Society mov'd with the desire of the Conversion of those barbarous People, went from *Quito*, and pierc'd as far as the Province of the *Cofanes*, who inhabit those Parts where the Springs of the River *Coca* rise. Those good Fathers were willing to begin the Publication of the Gospel among these People: But the Hour of their being call'd to the Knowledg of God was not yet come;



come ; for they found these Men so cruel, and so uncapable of hearing the Word, that they kill'd one of these Fathers nam'd *Raphael Ferrier*, and made the other fly for his Life.

In the Year 1621. under the Reign of *Philip IV.* King of Spain, *Vincent Delos Reyes de Villalobos*, Serjeant-Major, Governor and Captain-General of the Country of the *Quixos*, resolv'd to attempt the Navigation of the River *Amazone* ; but receiving an Order to quit his Government, he was oblig'd to lay aside the thoughts of this Adventure. *Alonze Miranda* form'd the same Design, prepar'd his Equipage, and took all necessary Precautions to overcome all the Difficulties of the Attempt, but had no better success than the others, for he dy'd without having so much as seen this famous River. Before either of these two the General *Joseph de Villamayor Maldonado* Governor of the *Quixos*, incited by the same Motives of the Glory of God, the Grandure of the King his Master, and the Salvation of so many Infidels, had consum'd all he had in the World in endeavouring to settle himself among those People that dwell on the Borders of that wonderful River.

## C H A P. XII.

*The Commission the King of Spain sent to the Governour of Brazil to make this Discovery.*

THE Spaniards were not the only Conquerors of the new World, that expressed so earnest a desire to render themselves Masters of those unknown Nations. The *Portuguez* were no less eager in the same Design, and knowing they were not far distant from the Mouth of the River, they were willing to believe this Discovery was reserv'd for them. In the Year 1626, *Bonito Macul* then Governour of *Para* receiv'd a Commission from *Philip III.* King of *Spain*, to put to Sea with some good Ships for this purpose, and try if he could overcome the Difficulties of this Discovery; but he could not put in execution these Orders of his Catholick Majesty, being call'd away by others more pressing, which oblig'd him to go into the King's Service at *Phernamebuc*.

In 1633, and 1634. the King of *Spain* being extremely impatient to see that Enterprize at last succeed, which had so many

ny times been in vain attempted, sent very pressing Orders to *Francesco Coello* Governor and Captain-General of the Island of *Maraguan*, and of the Town and Fortrefs of *Para*, to arm a considerable Force to attempt an effectual Discovery of this River: And directed him in his Orders, in case he had no Officer near him upon whose Conduct he could depend for the execution of this Design, to go in Person himself, because he was resolv'd absolutely to know whether it were impossible to go up this River, and to find the Source of it, and consequently its length. *Carvalho* could not obey the King his Master, because he did not think himself in a Condition to absent himself from his Government, and to divide his Forces at a time when he expected to be attacked by the Dutch, who were unwilling to lose any opportunity of making their Descents into *Brazil*: But what he did not think feasible, without the help of a good number of Men and Vessels, was happily accomplished by the good Fortune of two Lay-Friers of the Order of *St. Francis*, after the following manner.

## C H A P. XIII.

That which so many brave Men were not able to perform, was accomplish'd by two Lay-Friers of the Order of St. Francis, who escaped the hands of the Indians.

**T**HE Town of St. Francis in the Province of *Quito* is one of the finest in *America*; it is built upon one of those stupendous Mountains, which the Spaniards call *Cordeliers*, and *Tierras*, half a degree South of the Equinoctial Line; yet is it of the most agreeable Temperature, and the most plentiful and healthful Place in all *Peru*, and is never incommoded by excessive Heat. In 1635, 1636, and 1637, Captain *John de Palacios* having undertaken to attempt the Discovery of this River, to that end made a small Provision of Arms, desiring rather to acquaint himself with the Country, and to people it, than to subdue the Inhabitants of those Provinces by force of Arms. Several Monks of the Order of St. Francis were desirous to accompany him to essay the Conversion of these Barbarians, and promis'd themselves more Success in this Work than the Jesuits

Jesuits had, who 30 Years before had made the like Attempt, till they saw one of their number Father *Raphael Ferrier* martyr'd by these Infidels, as above related.

These march'd with more Precaution, and after a long Fatigue arriv'd at the Province of the long-hair'd Indians: This Country they found well peopled, but not being able to make any Establishment here by reason of the rough Treatment they met with from the Inhabitants, some of them gave over the Attempt, and return'd to *Quito*, but others were more resolute, and continued with Captain *de Palacios*, together with some few Souldiers that were always faithful to him: But these being almost all destroy'd in several Battels, in one of which at last the Captain himself was kill'd, the Monks made their Escape as well as they could, and the two Lay-Friers we have spoken of, one of whom was *Dominic de Britto*, and the other *Andrew de Toleda*, dexterously sav'd themselves from the hands of the Indians; and having got to their Bark, with six Souldiers that remain'd, abandon'd themselves to Providence, and suffer'd their Bark to be driven at the Pleasure of the Winds and Streams.

It pleas'd God so to favour their Voyage, that after they had been carried from

D

Pro-

Province to Province upon this great River, they happily landed at *Para*, a City in *Brazil*, forty Leagues distant from the Mouth of the *Amazone* Southward. The *Portuguez* possess it, and have made it a good Garison, belonging to the Government of *Maragnon*. The two Lay-Friers and the Souldiers were inquir'd of about their long and strange Voyage, but they were all eight of 'em so stupid, that they had made no particular Remark on any thing; only they said they had pass'd through divers Provinces of different Barbarians, who eat the Men which they take in War. The two *Cordeliers* offer'd to return to the place from whence they came, provided they might have a Vessel and Men granted 'em to conduct 'em, hoping they should again find the same Passages of the Rivers by which they came down, and so get back again as far as *Quito*. They were brought from *Para* to the City of *St. Lewis* in *Maragnon*, *James Raimond de Norogna* being then Governor of that Place, who having a Zeal for the Service of God, as well as that of the King, was willing to examin these Cordelier Friers more particularly than had been done at *Para*. He discours'd 'em with so much Patience and Sweetness, that he

†

made

made 'em talk reasonably: They told him they went from *Peru*, that their Monastery was in the City of *Quito*; that they came out with many of their Brethren to labour to convert the wild People, but that the Indians had a greater mind to eat 'em, than to hear 'em preach; that their Captain being dead, and their Brethren put to flight, they with six Souldiers had put themselves into a Bark which miraculously came ashore at *Para*; and that they were ready to return to *Peru*, if they could meet with a convenient Passage. The Governor having deliberated on this Report, believ'd God had offer'd him a fair occasion to serve his Religion and his Country, and that he ought to attempt that Design in which so many others had fail'd.

---

CHAP. XIV.

*The Governor of Brazil on the Report of these two Cordelier Friers, attempts the Discovery of this River. The Preparation he made for it, and the Commission given to Don Pedro de Texeira, who parted from Para in the Year 1637.*

**D**on Pedro de Norogna resolv'd to make Preparation for this Enterprize,

prize, and caus'd it to be publish'd: at this News many offer'd themselves to serve on this occasion. The Governor retain'd such as he thought most proper for his Design; and that he might have a Man capable of giving him an exact account of all he should see during so long a Voyage, he chose Capt. *Peter de Texeira*, a Man of Courage, Conduct, and Probity, to command the Fleet. This Gentleman with a great deal of Joy receiv'd a Command so suitable to his Inclinations, for he had been all his Life seeking occasions of serving his King to the prejudice of his own private Interest, and in the peril of his Life: and according to his desire he had the Glory of accomplishing the most difficult, and most illustrious Enterprize of his time. He parted from *Para* the 28<sup>th</sup> of *October* 1637. with forty seven Canoos of an indifferent bigness, wherein besides Ammunition and Victuals he embark'd seventy *Portuguez* Souldiers, and twelve hundred Indians to row and to bear Arms, who together with their Wives and Servants made two thousand Persons: They enter'd into the mouth of the River on that side that is nearest to *Para*, and happily avoided those Rocks that come just to the surface of the Water, and stop the Passage of Vessels in many places.

How-





Indians were weary of their Labour, and quitting their Oars, began to murmur, and make loud Complaints that they had been engag'd in so tedious a Voyage. 'Twas in vain to tell 'em they would soon be at the end of it: they desir'd *Texeira* to dismiss 'em, and finding he put 'em off from day to day, many tack'd about and return'd to *Para*. The General perceiv'd, that on this occasion he must use Prudence rather than Force, therefore he did not cause them that were fled back to be pursu'd, but endeavour'd with all imaginable Mildness to hinder others from following their Example: To this end he treated the Indians that remain'd with very kind Words, and so extremely pleas'd 'em with his Discourse, that those that heard him convey'd it from one Canoo to another with those external Demonstrations of Joy and Satisfaction, which they use to express in their Assemblies, so that they unanimously cry'd from all the Canoos, that they were willing *Texeira* should continue his Voyage, and that they would never leave him. The General having given 'em his Thanks for their goodwill, caus'd some Brandy to be distributed through all the Canoos, assuring 'em they would in a little time arrive at the Place design'd. And not content in  
having

having spread this Report among 'em, to fix the Indians the more firmly in their Resolution, he thought it necessary to do somewhat that might still make a greater appearance for their Encouragement. To this purpose he visited all the Canoos, and chose out eight of the best of 'em, which he loaded with Provision, Souldiers and Rowers. He made Colonel *Benedito Rodriguez d'Olivera*, a Native of *Brazil*, Commander of this Squadron; and having communicated his Design to him, sent him away with a Charge to send him often such News as might be most agreeable to the Indians. *Olivera* was no ordinary Man, he had naturally a quick and piercing Wit; and having been all his Life brought up with the Indians, he had so well studied their Actions and Countenances, that they could hardly dissemble so well, but he could with one cast of his Eye discover what was in their Minds; so that they look'd upon him as a Man that could divine what others thought; and from this Conceit they had not only a great Veneration for him, but stood so much in awe of him, that they yielded him a blind Obedience in what he commanded 'em. It is not to be question'd after this, whether those in the eight Canoos which he was to command were

very willing to go with him. His Men were so industrious one while at their Oars, and another while at their Sails, that they overcame all the Obstacles that presented, and safely arriv'd on the 24<sup>th</sup> of June 1638, at the place where the River of *Pagamino* enters into the *Amazone*. There is a Port near that place call'd after the Name of the River, where the Spaniards had fortified themselves, and had built a Town to keep the *Quixos* in subjection, who had not yet been well accustom'd to the Yoke.

---

C H A P. XVI.

*The Descent of General Texeira, and the Orders he gave for the Preservation of his Army in his Absence.*

**I**F the Impatience they were in to make their Descent had not stop'd 'em at this place, they would in failing some time longer have met with the Entrance of the River *Napo*, of which some account shall be given hereafter; where they would have met with better Entertainment, and would have been less expos'd to the Losses and Inconveniencies which they suffer'd in this Country. The very day they landed Colonel *Benedito* dispatch'd a Canoo to his General,

General, to give him advice of the Success of his Voyage, and in how little time he might also arrive at the same place. This News being spread through the Fleet, inspir'd them with new Vigor, when their Courage was almost exhausted with the tedious length of their Toil and Hunger together. *Texeira* made an Improvement of this good Success like a prudent Man, and confirm'd the Assurance that had been given 'em of their near approach to the place where they were to land, and follow'd *Benedito* with great Expedition: The *Portuguez* and the *Indians* perform'd their Duty with great Emulation, and every day that came about they concluded the next would be the last of their Voyage. In fine, the Day so much long'd for appear'd; and the General, to acquit himself of his Promise, landed all his Men at the mouth of a River that descends into that of the *Amazones* through the Province of those Indians that wear their Hair as long as that of Women. These People formerly kept a good Correspondence with the Spaniards, and consented to their Establishment in their Country: but having been forced to take up Arms against Captain *Palacios* for the ill Treatment they had receiv'd from his Souldiers; and having kill'd  
the

the Captain himself in a Battel, they remain'd implacable Enemies to the Spaniards. The Portuguez General who had never been inform'd of this Rupture, was desirous to refresh his Troops in this Country, finding it to be a very fine, fruitful and commodious place; he therefore pitch'd his Camp in the Angle of Land which was form'd by the two Rivers, and having well intrench'd it towards the Plain, he there plac'd his Portuguez and Indians, and made Captain *Peter Dacosta Favotta*, and Captain *Peter Bajou* the chief Commanders over 'em. These two wise and valiant Officers gave their General the greatest Proofs imaginable both of their Conduct and Fidelity. They continued encamp'd in this place for eleven Months, in which time they endur'd extraordinary Inconveniencies, for they were often oblig'd to fight with these long-hair'd Men to obtain a little Food to live upon; and many of the Souldiers fell sick, partly by the bad Disposition of the Air, which could not be wholesome between two Rivers, and partly from so tedious a Confinement to their Camp.

---

CHAP. XVII.

*The Arrival of the Portuguez at Quito.*

*The general Joy, and the Emulation of the Portuguez and Spaniards on the account of this Discovery.*

**T***Exeira* for his own part made the best of his way with a few Men in some of his Canoos, to join Col. *Benedito*; and having receiv'd an account of him, he left his Bark where the River ended, and went on foot to find him in the City of *Quito*, whither he had arriv'd some days before. The coming of General *Texeira* compleated the Joy which all the People of *Quito*, as well the Clergy as others, had receiv'd from a Discovery so much desir'd by 'em all. All the Portuguez were entertain'd and carefs'd by the Spaniards with the Endearments of Brethren, not only because they were all Subjects of the same King, but because by their means they were assur'd of a Way which they had never hitherto been able to pass, on the side of *Peru*, and which they saw was now discover'd from the Sea quite to the Sources of this famous River. The Spaniards boasted that they were the first that  
had

had navigated it from its Source to the Sea ; and the others bragg'd that they had not only fail'd upon it, but had pass'd quite up it, made a thorow Discovery of it, and knew it from its Mouth on the side of *Brazil* to its very Source near *Quito*. All the Religious Orders of that City were fill'd with extraordinary Joy, thanking God for the Favour he had shewn 'em in calling 'em to dress a Vineyard that had not been yet cultivated ; and all offer'd themselves with great Readiness to go and preach the Gospel in those Regions.

---

C H A P. XVIII.

The Return of General *Texeira* to *Brazil* by the River *Amazone*, and the Commission given to the Reverend Father Christopher d'Acugna a Jesuit, to observe all the Particulars of this Discovery, and to give a Relation of them.

**Q**uito is a Royal Seat, where there is a President and Assistants: These Officers considering the Importance of this Discovery the Portuguez had made, and how much both the Interest of Religion, and that of his Catholick Majesty might suffer, if an Affair of this Consequence should



should be neglected, were unwilling to take any measures of their own, but only to write about it to the Count of *Chinchon*, who was then *Viceroy* of *Peru*; who having deliberated on the matter with the principal Men of the Council of *Lima*, which is the Sovereign Court of that great Kingdom, return'd an Answer to the President of *Quito*, who was then the Licentiate *Don Alonze de Salazar*, and requir'd him by an Order dated the 10th of *November* 1638, to send General *Texeira* to *Para* with all his Men by the same way he came, and to furnish him with all things necessary for his Voyage; he likewise order'd him to choose two Spanish Gentlemen of good account, and to agree with the Portuguez General that they might imbarck with him, to make a faithful Report of the whole Course they should steer in this long Voyage, that his Catholick Majesty might receive from Eye-witnesses, and those of an unreprouchable Reputation, a good account of what they had discover'd, or might farther observe in their Return.

Many Persons, zealous for the Service of the King their Master, presented themselves to have a share in so great an Enterprize; amongst others *Don Vasques d'Acugna*, Knight of the Order of *Calatrava*, and  
Lieu-

Lieutenant to the Captain General of the Vice-roy of *Peru*, and *Corregidor* of *Quito*, offer'd himself to go on this Expedition. The Respect he bare to his Prince made him seek this new occasion of serving him with the same Affection he had done for above fifty Years himself, and his Ancestors all their days on the like occasions. He desir'd of the Vice-roy that he would permit him to furnish the Ammunition and Equipage for this Adventure at his own proper Charge, without pretending to any other Interest in the matter, than that of seeing his Master well serv'd. But the Vice-roy not knowing how to spare him from the Post he was already in, after having commended his Zeal for his King, and the Greatness of his Offers, engag'd him to continue in his present Station; and to gratify him, nominated his Brother Father *Christopher d'Acugna* in his place, who was animated with no less degree of Generosity than the other, and counted it no small Happiness to be able by these means to serve his Prince on so important an Occasion.

---

CHAP. XIX.

*The Departure of Father D'Acugna. The way the Spaniards and Portuguez took together to get to the River Amazone.*

THE Portuguez General being prepar'd for his return to *Para* by the River *Amazone*; and the Royal Audience of *Quito* having well consider'd that it might very much turn to account for some Jesuits to make this Voyage with him, that they might take exact notice of every thing worthy of Observation on this great River, and carry the Relation of it into *Spain* to his Catholick Majesty, signified their Mind to the Provincial of the Jesuits, which at that time was Father *Francis de Fuentes*, who taking it for a great Honour, that so much Confidence should be put in the Members of his Community as the discharge of so important an Affair, confirm'd the Nomination that had been made of Father *Christopher D'Acugna*, tho he was Rector of the Jesuits College at *Cuenca* under the Jurisdiction of *Quito*, and gave him Father *Andrew Dartieda*, Professor of Divinity in the same College, for his Companion. These two Jesuits receiv'd the Orde

Orders by Patents issued from the Chancery of *Quito*; the Purport of which was, that they should go without delay with the Captain Major *Peter de Texeira*, and that after they were arriv'd at *Para* they should go into *Spain*, to give the King an Account of all they should observe in their Voyage. These Fathers readily obey'd the Orders they had receiv'd, and accordingly set forward on the 16th of *January* 1639, to begin a Voyage that lasted ten Months before they arriv'd at *Para*, where they enter'd into Port the twelfth day of *December* in the same Year. As they left *Quito*, they took the way of those high Mountains on foot, from which that great River of the *Amazones* derives its Sources, a River which has nothing in its rise wherein it excels other Rivers, but is so very much augmented in its Course, that the Mouth of it is eighty four Leagues in breadth. These Jesuits took all the care they could, and labour'd with all possible Accuracy to observe every thing that was worth a Remark; they took the Latitudes in every place of the River where they could do it; they took an account of the Names of all the Rivers that run into it, and of all the Nations that inhabit the Borders of it: They took notice of the  
Quality

Quality of the Lands, of the Goodness of the Fruits, of the Temperature of the Climates, and of every thing that is serviceable to the Life of Man; they enter'd into Commerce with the People of the Country: In a word, they forgot nothing that they thought might conduce to furnish them with a perfect Knowledg of those Provinces, which had never been entirely discover'd till then. Therefore they that read this Relation, are desir'd by one of those Fathers, who undertook to expose it to the World, not to disbelieve what he has written, because he can prove that what he affirms for a Truth, is really so, by above thirty Spaniards and Portuguez that accompanied him in this Voyage; and he hopes the Reader will not imagine he makes no Conscience of affirming things that are untrue in a matter of this Weight and Importance.

---

C H A P. XX.

*The general Idea which Father D'Acugna gives of this River, and the Elogiums he gives it after he had view'd it throughout.*

**O**N the famous River of *Amazons* is the richest, most fertile, and best  
E peo-

peopled Country of *Peru*; and without an *Hyperbole* 'tis the largest and most eminent River in the World; it passes through divers Kingdoms of a vast Extent, and enriches more Provinces than the *Ganges*, that vast River that waters part of the *East Indies*; than the *Euphrates*, which after it has run through *Persia*, comes across *Syria* to throw it self into the Sea; or than the *Nile*, which comes out of the Mountains of *Cuama*, and passing through *Africa*, and the most barren Countries in the World, turns them into fruitful and delicious Provinces by the overflowing of its Waters. In a word, the River *Amazone* nourishes an infinitely greater number of People, and carries its fresh Water a great way further into the Sea, than any of those mighty Rivers, altho these have given their Names to entire Gulphs, or troubled the Sea with their Waters to a considerable length. A great many more Rivers fall into the *Amazone* than into the *Ganges*; and if the Banks of the latter are cover'd with gilded Sand, those of the former are fill'd with a Sand of pure Gold, and the Waters that always wash them are continually discovering Mines of Gold and Silver in the Bowels of the Earth. In short, the Places it  
waters

waters are an Earthly Paradise; and if Men did but lend their Assistance to Nature in that Country as they do in others, all the Borders of that great River would be full of large Gardens perpetually fill'd with Fruits and Flowers: It sometimes overflows its Banks, and thereby renders all the Ground fruitful through which its Waters pass, and that not only for one, but for several Years. After all these extraordinary Improvements, the change of Seasons is not necessary to the Provinces situate near this great River. They find every thing near 'em, abundance of Fish in their Waters more than they can wish; a thousand different kinds of Animals in the neighbouring Mountains, all sorts of Birds in such plenty as can hardly be imagined: The Trees always loaded with Fruit, the Fields with a plentiful Crop, and the Bowels of the Earth consisting of precious Mines of all sorts of Metals. In fine, among the vast number of People that dwell along the Banks of this River, there are scarce any to be seen but what are handsome, well made, and very ingenious in all things they are concern'd about.

## CHAP. XXI.

*The Source of this River, and the Emulation of all the Provinces of Peru about it.*

TO enter into a particular History of this River, I shall begin with its Original: and as there have heretofore been great Contests between eminent Cities about the Birth of divers Hero's of former Ages; so there is no less Emulation among the Provinces of *Peru*, which of them should be the Mother of this great River, because the true Source of it is unknown to this day. The City of *Lima*, as magnificent and as potent as it is, boasts that she has the Mountains of *Ganneo* and the *Cavaliers* within her Jurisdiction, and the Fountain-head of the *Amazone* seventy Leagues above her: But this is not the Source of it, but of another River that runs into the *Amazone*. Others maintain that the Source of this great River proceeds from the Mountains of *Moida* in the new Kingdom of *Granada*, and is call'd the River *Caquetta*: but they are mistaken too, and confound the matter; for the *Caquetta* and the *Amazone* run separately above seven hundred Leagues,  
and



and when they come near together, the *Caquetta* seems to turn its Course, and running on the side of the *Amazone* at a considerable distance, thus continues it, till having at length pierced through the Province of *Agnos*, it comes to add its Waters to that vast River. But in a word, *Peru* in general claims the Original of this great Work of Nature.

But the truth of this matter is, that the City of *St. Francis*, commonly call'd *Quito*, has the sole Glory of producing this great Wonder of the World. Eight Leagues from this City is found the true Source of this River beyond those vast Mountains that divide the Jurisdiction of this City from that of the *Quixos*, at the foot of two great Rocks, one of which is call'd *Guanama*, and the other *Pulca*, which stand at near two Leagues distance one from another. Between those two Mountains is a great Lake, and in the midst of this Lake is another Mountain, which has been torn up by the very Roots by an Earthquake, and so overturn'd in the Lake, which is very deep and large: 'Tis from this Lake that the great River of *Amazons* proceeds, within twenty Minutes of the Equinoctial Line, Southern Latitude.

## C H A P. XXII.

*The Course of this River, its Length, its different Breadth and Depth.*

**T**HIS River runs from West to East, it continually coasts along the South side of the Equinoctial Line, and is not distant from it above two, three, four or at most five Degrees in the greatest of its Windings: From its Rise to the Place where it empties it self into the Sea, it runs not above 1276 good Spanish Leagues, tho *Oreillane* makes it 1800. It always proceeds in a winding Course, and by its great Turnings, which are like so many Arms, draws into its Channel a great number of Rivers as well from the South as the North side of it. Its breadth is different; in some places 'tis a League wide, in others two, three, and more; in other Places it does not widen it self any more for a long space, as if it were to amass all its Waters, and its whole impetuous Force together, to discharge it self by a Mouth of eighty four Leagues broad into the Sea.

The narrowest Place of this River is a quarter of a League, or a little less, in  
two

two Degrees two thirds of Southern Latitude.

This Strait by the Providence of God, is fitly situated for the building of a Citadel to stop the Course of the strongest Enemy that should enter by Sea through the Mouth of this River; and if an Enemy should come down by a River that runs into the *Amazon* call'd *Rionegro*, by building a Fort just where this River enters into the *Amazon*, this Passage may be so secured, that any that should attempt to get through it may be easily hindred. This Strait is three hundred and seventy Leagues from the Mouth of the River, from whence with Canoos and other light Vessels with Sails and Oars, timely Advice might be given in eight days of the Arrival of any Vessels, that the Fort at this Strait might put it self in a posture of Defence, and stop the Enemy's Passage. The Depth of this River is in some Places so great, that no Bottom is to be found: from the Mouth of it, to the River *Rionegro*, which is near 600 Leagues, there's always at least thirty or forty Fathom of Water in its greatest Channel. From thence upwards the Depth of it is uncertain, sometimes twenty, sometimes twelve, and sometimes eight Fathom:

But at its Beginning it has Water enough to carry the largest Vessels : For tho the Current be very fwift ; yet every day without fail there rise certain Eastern Breezes, that continue three or four Hours together, and sometimes a whole day ; which hold back the Waters, so as to retain the Stream in a degree of Motion that is not violent.

---

C H A P. XXIII.

*The great number of Islands in this River, and the means the Inhabitants use for the Preservation of their Roots at the time of its Inundations.*

**T**HIS River is all full of Islands of all Sizes, and in so great number, that they are not to be counted, many of them being very near one to another. There are some four or five, others ten, and others 20 Leagues in compass. That which is inhabited by the *Toupinambi*, of whom we shall speak hereafter, is above 100 Leagues about : There are a great many very small Islands, which the Inhabitants of the Country use only to sow their Seed in ; but all of these, and the greatest part of the large ones, are overflowed by the River every

every

every Year; and these regular Inundations do so enrich them with the Slime and Mud it carries along with it, that they would never become barren, tho they should be every year sown with *Yuca* or *Magnioca*, which are a sort of Roots, which serve the Natives instead of Bread, and with which the Earth furnishes them in great abundance.

Tho these frequent Inundations seem to be attended with great Inconveniencies; yet the Author of Nature has taught these Barbarians to make a good Improvement of them. Before these Floods come, they gather in all their *Yuca*, of which Root they make a sort of Bread called *Cassave*, which is ordinarily used in all the Coasts of *Brazil*, and in many other Places both of the Continent and Islands of *America*. They make great Caves in the Ground, wherein they put these Roots; and having well stopp'd them up with Earth, leave 'em there as long as the Flood lasts: this is an infallible way of preserving those Roots which otherwise would be subject to rot with the excessive moisture of the Ground. When the Waters are run off, they open these Caves, and take out their Roots, and eat them, without finding them at all the worse for lying in the Earth. Thus as  
Nature

Nature has taught the Ant to store up Food enough to nourish her all the Year, no wonder she has taught the Indians, as barbarous as they are, how to preserve their Provisions, seeing the Divine Providence takes a more particular Care of Men than of Beasts.

---

CHAP. XXIV.

*The Bread and Drink made by the Inhabitants of these Islands, and other Places that border on this River; and the various sorts of Fruits, Roots and Grain they live upon.*

**T**HE Roots of Yuca we have been speaking of, serve these People for Bread, which they eat with their other Food; besides this they make a Drink of it, which they all generally esteem as the most delicious and excellent Liquor in the World. To make the Bread, they squeeze out all the Juice of the Root, and then beat and pound it, till 'tis become a kind of Meal, of which they make great Cakes, and bake them in an Oven; this they call *Cassave*, which has a very pleasant Taste when 'tis new, but after one day becomes very dry, so that it may be kept several Months; they ordinarily put it on the tops  
of

of their Huts, that it may keep the more dry. And when they have a mind to make their Drink, they take these dry Cakes, and temper them in Water, which they boil as long as they think sufficient, over a gentle Fire: This Paste boil'd thus in Water, makes a Drink so strong by its great Fermentation, that it fuddles 'em like our Wine. They use this Drink at all their Assemblies and Entertainments, as when they inter their Dead, when they receive any Guests, when they celebrate their Feasts, at their Seed-time, and Harvest; in a word, at all times when they meet, this Liquor is the Spirit that animates 'em, and the Charm that holds 'em together. They make besides this, another sort of Drink, with a great deal of wild Fruit, of which they have extraordinary plenty; this they peel, and put in Water, with which when it is well mix'd, it soon by Fermentation acquires such a Savour and Strength, that it often has a more agreeable Relish than Beer, which is so much in use in many Nations. They keep these Liquors in great Earthen Vessels, as they do in *Spain*, or in lesser ones, which they make of the Trunk of a hollow Tree; or else in Baskets made of Rushes, which they cover within and without with a sort  
of

of Pitch, so that they don't leak in the least. This Bread and Drink are not the only Provisions they live upon; they have many other sorts of Food in use amongst 'em, besides Fruit of various kinds, as Bonanes, Ananas, Gouyaves, Amos, and a sort of very pleasant Chesnuts, which at *Peru* they call *Almandras de la Sierra*, that is Mountain-Almonds; but the Truth is, they are rather of the Figure of a Chesnut than of an Almond, because they grow in Hulls that are bristly, like those of our Chesnuts: They have Palms of various kinds, Coco-Nuts, and Dates that are very well tasted, tho they are wild, and many other sorts of Fruit, that are produced only in hot Countries. They have likewise divers kinds of Roots, that are good Food, as Batates, Yuca, Mensa, which the Portuguez call *Machachora*, and *Cajas*, which are like our Saligots, and others, which are good both to rost and boil, have a pleasant Relish, and are very nourishing.



CHAP. XXV.

*The great Plenty of Fish in this River, and which is the best sort of them.*

FISH is so common with 'em, that when any one offers it to 'em, they proverbially say, E'ne put it in your own Dish. There is so great a number of 'em in the River, that without any other Nets than their Hands, they can take as many as they please. But the *Pege Buey* is as it were the King of all the Fish that swim in the River *Amazone*, from its Source till it discharges it self into the Sea. 'Tis not to be imagin'd what a delicious Taste this Fish has, any one that eats it would think it to be most excellent Flesh well season'd: This Fish is as big as a Heifer of a Year and a half old, it has a Head and Ears just like those of a Heifer, and the Body of it is all cover'd with Hair, like the Bristles of a white Hog; it swims with two little Arms, and under its Belly it has Teats with which it suckles its young Ones: The Skin of it is very thick, and when 'tis dress'd into Leather it serves to make Targets that are Proof against a Musquet Bullet. This Fish feeds upon Grass on the Bank of the River, like an Ox, from which it receives so good Nourishment, and is  
of

of so pleasant a Taste, that a Man is more strengthen'd and better satisfied in eating a small quantity of it, than in eating twice as much Mutton: This Fish has not free Respiration in the Water, and therefore often thrusts out its Snout to take Breath, and is by this means discover'd to them that seek after it. When the Indians get the sight of it, they follow it with their Oars in little Canoos; and when it appears above Water to get Breath, they throw at it their sort of Harping-Irons made of Shells, with which they stop its course, and take it: when they have kill'd it, they cut it into good pieces, and broil it upon Wooden Grates, which they call *Boucan*; and being thus dress'd, 'twill keep good above a Month: They have not the way of salting and drying it to keep a great while, because they have no great quantity of Salt, and that which they use to season their Meat is very rare with 'em, and is made only of the Ashes of a sort of Palm-Tree, so that 'tis more like Salt-Peter than common Salt.

*Note.* This *Pege Buey* is very common in all the Rivers along the Coast of the Continent, and is call'd by the English *Manati*. There is a great Vend for 'em in the *Antilles* or *Antego-Islands*, whither the Captains of Merchant-Ships carry 'em, who buy 'em of the Indians that fish for 'em in the Rivers, for Knives and Bills, and make the Sea-men bone 'em and salt 'em, that they may keep till they have opportunity to sell 'em.

CHAP. XXVI.

*The Means the Indians use to preserve their Fish in those Seasons wherein they can neither fish nor hunt.*

**T**H O the Indians don't know how to keep their broil'd Fish very long, yet they sustain no great damage by it, because Nature has given them Industry enough to get fresh Meat all their Winter, which is the time of the Rains, during which they can neither hunt nor fish. For this purpose they make choice of some fit places where the Floods can never come, and there they dig a kind of a Pond of a moderate depth, to hold a good quantity of Water, which they inclose round with a Palifado of Stakes; they bring Water into these Ponds, and keep 'em always full, that they may use 'em as Reservers for their Winter Provisions. At the season when the Tortoises come ashore to lay their Eggs, the Indians go to lie in Ambush in the places where they know they ordinarily come; and when they see a sufficient number upon the shore, they go and turn 'em upon their Backs, to hinder 'em from retreating; and when they have thus secur'd 'em, they begin at their  
leisure

leisure to carry 'em to their Reservers: for this end, when they are at any considerable distance from their Huts, they string all their Tortoises together with great Cords through holes that they make on the top of their Shells, and turning 'em upon their Feet lead 'em to the Water, where they tie 'em to their Canoos, and so make 'em follow them home: when they are got home, they put 'em in their Reservers, and unloose 'em, feeding 'em with the Leaves and Branches of Trees which they throw into them, and take 'em out to spend as they want 'em. One of these Tortoises is enough to feed a numerous Family some time; so that 'tis not to be wonder'd at, that these Indians are never reduc'd to Scarcity, seeing they make Provision of so great a number of Tortoises, having commonly above a hundred in each Reserver; so that the proportion they provide for each Person in their Families is enough to maintain several People. These Tortoises are as large as those Targets Souldiers formerly us'd to defend themselves withal, and their Flesh is as good as that of a Heifer. At the time of their laying, some Females are found with two or three hundred Eggs in their Belly bigger than those of Pullets, and as good, tho  
not

not of so easy Digestion. At one Season of the Year they are so fat, that a good Barrel of Fat may be taken out of 'em, which is as good as Butter, and being salted a little, tastes extraordinary well, and keeps very well too; this will not only serve to fry Fish, but is likewise as good for Sauces as the best Butter in the World: so that these Barbarians have no absolute need of our Commodities, but make as good Provision for their Necessities, as the most civiliz'd Nations in the World can do. 'Tis not amiss further to remark two things in respect of these Tortoises; one is, that after they have made a Hole in the Sand above the Bounds of the highest Tides, they lay all their Eggs at a time, one after another, after which they carefully cover them up with the same Sand they have digged up to make their Nest, so that 'tis impossible for any to discover the place of it. Then they return backwards into the Water, to prevent the notice of their true Track, and never come ashore again till the next Year, leaving their Eggs to be hatch'd by the Heat of the Sun, which is always accomplish'd in forty days; after which the young ones are seen to creep out of the Sand, being about the bigness of a Crown, and thus in a train, like Ants, they make to the Water. The other Re-

F

mark

mark is, that the Sea-men bone 'em, and salt them, and so carry 'em into all the Colonies of the *Antego* Islands, a Trade in which many Captains and Merchants have found their Account.

---

C H A P. XXVII.

*The Prudence these People have been taught by Necessity, and the Confidence they have in the abundance of all things which they enjoy.*

**T**HE Indians of this happy River make this prudent Provision I have been speaking of, for a Season wherein they seem to want every thing; but their Winter being past, their Fears are carried away with it, and they have plenty of all things; so that they never take care for the Morrow: and because they don't think of wanting any thing the ensuing day, they make no other Provision for it, than in feeding themselves well to day, that they may be the stronger and more ready in seeking their Food to morrow. They have all imaginable Dexterity in catching all sorts of Fish that are in this River, and have as many ways for it as there is diversity of Seasons. When the Inundations diminish, and leave Lakes in the lower  
† parts

parts of the Lands that have been overflow'd, they have a very pleasant Trick to take the Fish that are left in those places: They strike the Water with two or three flat Sticks, with the noise of which the Fish are no sooner stunn'd, but they come up to the top of the Water, as if they were dead, and suffer themselves to be taken up with the hand: Not that it is the Noise that produces this Effect, but the Quality of the Wood, which makes the Fish drunk. The *Galibis* who are the Natives of *Cayen*, and of one part of *Guiana*, make use of it, and call it *Inecou*.

But the most common way of fishing which they use at all times, and on all occasions, is with an Arrow which they dart with one hand from a smooth little Board which they hold in t'other. This Arrow having pierc'd the Fish, serves instead of a Cork to shew which way it moves when it is wounded; they pursue it in their Canoos, and getting hold of the end of the Arrow they draw up the Fish with it: they catch all sorts of Fish after this manner, neither small nor great can escape their Weapons. And there are so many sorts of 'em in this River, and all of 'em so excellent, that it would be too tedious a business to give an ample Description of 'em. There is one amongst

the rest which the Indians call *Paraque*, which resembles a great Eel, or rather a small Conger, which has a very strange Property; for if a Man takes it in his Hand while 'tis alive, immediately a Coldness and Shivering seizes him, as if he were taken with a fit of an Ague; but the shaking presently ceases upon letting it go out of his Hand again.

---

C H A P. XXVIII.

*The abundance of Game that is found near this River; and the divers sorts of Animals the People of these Countries live upon.*

**T**O prevent the Disgust these wild People might have of Fish, tho it were never so good, if they should always be forc'd to feed upon it, and to satisfy the Desire they might have of sometimes eating Flesh, Nature has render'd the Land as favourable to 'em as the Water; for it produces Animals of all kinds, as well for the Necessity as for the Delight of its Inhabitants. But among others there is a Creature call'd *Dautas*, of the bigness of a Mule, and very like one both in Colour and Shape, the Flesh of which is as good as that of a young Bullock, only it has a  
 † more



more faint and waterish Taste: They have likewise a sort of Hogs in the Mountains, that are neither of our domestick, nor of our wild kind of Swine, but of a particular Species, which have a sort of Vent upon their Backs, like a Navel. All the *West Indies* are stor'd with this kind of Animals: Their Flesh is very good and wholesome, and at least may compare with that of the wild Swine that are taken in some Forests in *Europe*. Besides these, there is another sort resembling our Domestick Hogs: they have also *Renados, Pacas, Cotias, Ignanats, Agotis*, and other Animals which are peculiar to the *West Indies*, and are as good as the most delicious sorts we have in *Europe*. They have also Partridges, and tame Poultry like ours, which have been brought to 'em from *Peru*, and which from one to another have been spread throughout the Coasts of the River of *Amazons*. The many Lakes they have up and down breed a multitude of Geese, and other Water-Fowl. 'Tis very remarkable how little Pains their Game costs 'em: We often had experience of it in our Camp. Every Evening when our Men went ashore, after they had caus'd the Indians that were of our Party to make us as many Huts as were necessary to lodg us (which took up some time); our

Company separated, some went a hunting in the Mountains with their Dogs, others went upon the River with their Bows and Arrows, and in a few hours time we should see 'em return loaded with more Fish and Venison than all our Men could eat; and this was not once or twice only, but throughout our whole Voyage, not without our great Admiration; which gave us occasion to attribute this great Abundance to the mighty and liberal Providence of that God, who once fed five thousand Persons with five Loaves and a few Fishes.

---

C H A P. XXIX.

*The agreeable Temperature of the Air in all this Country; what it is that makes Winter there, and whether the Heat be great, it being under the Line. That there is but one Inconveniency there.*

**A**LL along this River, and in all the neighbouring Provinces, the Air is so temperate, and the Seasons of the Year so regular, that there's no Excess either of Heat or Cold, nor any troublesome variety of Weather: For tho there is every Year a kind of Winter, yet it does not proceed from the different Course of the Planets, or Distance of the Sun, for that always

always rises and sets at the same hour. That which most incommodes 'em is the frequency of the Inundations, which leave a great Dampness in the Ground, and by their overflowing the Plains, hinder 'em several Months from sowing and gathering in the Fruits of the Earth. By these Floods they distinguish the Winter from the Spring throughout all *Peru*: they call all that time wherein the Earth produces no Crop, the Winter; and they call that Season the Spring, which they employ in sowing, and gathering in not only their *Maze*, which is the principal part of their Harvest, but all the other Product of the Ground, whether that which grows spontaneously, or by Cultivation. These Inundations happen twice a Year all along the whole Extent of this River.

We have observ'd, that those who dwell near the Mountains of *Quito*, suffer more Heat than those that inhabit along this River towards the Sea; the reason is, because there come Breezes from the Coast of the Northern Sea, that continue two, three or four hours in a day, and sometimes more; these Winds extreamly refresh the Air, and are a great Comfort to those People that are less remote from the Sea.

However, it must be said that the highest degree of Heat, even in the Moun-

tains themselves, is no greater than is at *Panama*, and at *Cartagena*: for however violent it be in it self, it is every where moderated by the gentle Winds, which blow every day, and not only render the Air tolerable and agreeable to the Inhabitants, but have besides the Property of preserving all their Victuals and Stores from corrupting. I have had the Experience of it my self in the Wafers we carried with us, which at the end of five Months and a half since we parted from *Quito*, were as good as if they had been newly made. This made me and my Companion wonder the more, because in our Travels in almost all other Parts of *America*, we observ'd, that Bread and other things of the least Substance corrupted in a little time.

And tho all this long stretch of Land is so near the Equinoctial Line, yet the Heat of the Sun is not at all hurtful, nor the Evening Air neither, tho it be very cool and moist. I have good reason to testify this, for during our whole Voyage I have commonly pass'd whole Nights in the open Air, without getting the least Pain in my Head, or the least Defluxion of Rhume; and yet in all other Places, the least walking abroad in a Moon-shiny Night, has very much incommoded me. 'Tis true, at the beginning of our Voyage, almost all  
of

of our Men that came from cold Countries had Agues, but were all cur'd by bleeding three or four times. We neither felt, nor heard of any such bad Air along this River, as there is in almost all other places of *Peru* that have been discover'd, where People are sometimes in a moment taken with violent Rhumatisms throughout all their Limbs, which could not proceed but from a sudden Corruption of the Humours, and which in some degenerated to an incurable Palsy, and cost others their Lives. In a word, were it not for the Heats which are in most of the inhabited Parts of *Peru* intolerable, the Country of the River of *Amazons* might without Exaggeration be term'd an Earthly Paradise.

---

CHAP. XXX.

*The Beauty of this Country, and the abundance of Medicinal Simples, Plants and Trees it yields.*

**T**His sweet Temperature of the Air causes all the Borders of this River to be cover'd with a thousand kinds of lovely Trees, the pleasant Verdure of which is perpetually preserv'd by the moderate Disposition of the Air: a thousand Landskips were presented to our Eyes still more and more

more fine, and more diversified, as if they emulated one another, and made us confess that Art had yet a great deal to learn of Nature, when she discovers her self after so excellent and surprizing a manner. The Ground is very low in most places near the Banks of the River, but rises gradually at a distance, with little Hills that adjoin to curious Plains all cover'd with Flowers, without so much as a Tree; beyond these are lovely Vales all cloth'd with Grasse and Herbs, preserv'd continually green by the refreshing Rivulets that run through 'em.

Beyond all this Extent of Ground are Hills rising one above another, till they make those high Mountains which extend from one end of *Peru* to the other, call'd *Cordeliers*, because they are rang'd in order, as if they were plac'd by a Line or Cord.

There are a great many Thickets that produce all sorts of Simples, which the Indians know how to use for the Cure of their Diseases. There grow *Cassia-Trees*, which bear the best *Cassia* in all the *Indies*. There is excellent *Sarsaparilla*, *Gums* and *Rosins*, that are very good for Wounds and Bruises; and a prodigious quantity of Honey, which the Bees on all sides make in such abundance, that the store of it is not to be exhausted. This is as good to  
eat,

eat, as it is for the Composition of various Medicines: The Bees also make a sort of black Wax, which is however very good, and burns as well as that which is white or yellow. There are a kind of Trees, call'd by the People of the Country *Audirouac*, from which there runs an Oil of extraordinary Virtue for curing Wounds: There is another Tree call'd *Copayba*, which yields a Balm surpassing the best that is to be had in the East. In a word, there grows a multitude of different kinds of Herbs and Plants of very great Virtue, besides those that are not yet known, which would suffice to make a new *Dioscorides*, and a second *Pliny*: And it would be a matter of no small Difficulty to give an account of all the Properties of so many different Simples.

---

CHAP. XXXI.

*The Multitude of Trees that grow in this Countrey, Cedars, and other kinds fit for the building of Vessels; and the Providence of Nature in furnishing this Part of the World with all Necessaries for that purpose, except Iron.*

THE Trees that grow along this River are innumerable, and of a surprising

prizing Tallness and Bulk. I measured a Cedar that was thirty Hands breadth in Compass; the Poplars are almost all of that size, and excellent Timber for building either for Sea or Land. Those Trees which are known in the Country, are for the most part Cedars, *Coibos*, *Palohierro*, and *Palocolorado*, and other such like, which are no sooner cut down, but they may be safely used; and the Vessels that are made of 'em may be launched as soon as they are finished. There is no need of any of the Materials of *Europe* for the building of 'em in those Parts; but only of *Iron* for the forging of Nails, and other pieces of Smiths Work necessary to the building of great and small Vessels. All other things are found in this Country in great Plenty: The Inhabitants make Cables of the Bark of Trees; they have Pitch and Tar as good as are to be had in *Europe*; and they have Oil either to render it firm and solid, or to temper its Hardness; one sort of which they draw from Fish, and another sort they get from Trees. They make a sort of Tow, which they call *Ambira*, so good, that no better can be used for the caulking of Vessels, and to make Musket-Match. Their Cotton abundantly furnishes 'em with Stuff to make Sails, and this grows the best of all the



the small Seeds they sow in their Fields. And after all, there are so great numbers of People, that one might have as many Work-men and Sea-men as one pleas'd for the building and manning of as many Gallies as one should think meet to put upon the Stocks.

---

CHAP. XXXII.

*Four things which abound on the Banks of this River, which are capable of enriching great Kingdoms.*

**T**Here are four things along this River, which being well manag'd, would be capable of enriching many Kingdoms; the first is *Wood* for building, of which there is some found of a rare and particular Colour, like fine *Ebony*; and there is so prodigious a quantity of common *Wood*, that is worth transporting, that how much soever should be carried away, the *Country* can never be exhausted.

The second thing is the *Coco-tree*, which serves for the Composition of *Chocolate*; with these the Banks of the River are covered, and throughout our whole Voyage, our Men cut scarce any thing else to make Huts of for our Camp. This Tree is very much esteem'd for its Fruit  
through-

throughout all *New Spain*, and in all other Places where it is known what *Chocolat* is. Every Foot of this Tree will produce eight Silver Rials, all Charges paid. And it may easily be suppos'd there's no need of great labour to cultivate these Trees along this River, seeing Nature, without the Assistance of Husbandry and Art, makes 'em bring forth Fruit in so great abundance.

The third is *Tobacco*, of which there is a prodigious quantity along this River, which is very much esteem'd by all the Natives; so that if it were rais'd with that Care this Plant requires, it would be the best *Tobacco* in the World; because in the Judgment of those that understand it, there can't be desired a better Soil and Climat for this sort of Plant, than what is to be found on this River.

But that which is the most considerable of all, and for the sake of which in my opinion it would be very well worth the while to make firm and substantial Establishments along this River, is *Sugar*: This is the fourth thing; and the Traffick of it is more honourable, as well as the Profit more sure and greater for a Nation than that of the rest. And now since we are engag'd in a War with the Dutch, it ought to excite an Emulation in us, and make us endeavour to furnish our selves with  
with

with those Commodities our Enemies bring from *Brazil*\*; and we ought to establish our selves with all Expedition in this Countrey, and set up Mills and other Sugar-Works; which would neither require very much Time, nor Labour, nor Charge, which last is that which is most fear'd now a days. The Ground is as good for the planting of Sugar-Canes, as any is in the whole Continent of *Brazil*; and of this we can give Assurance, as having seen and known all those Provinces. The Soil on the Banks of this River is white and fat, of as good a kind as can be desired by those that know what belongs to the Cultivation of these Plants; and it becomes so fruitful and rich by the Inundations of the River, which by continuing a few days improve the Ground, that there is more reason to fear too great than too little a Crop. 'Twill be no new thing to make Sugar-Canes grow in this Country, because we found throughout the whole Length of this great River, such as gave us sufficient Proof of the great abundance to which they might be multiplied when-

\* *Note.* At the time when this Voyage was made, the Dutch, who were at War with the Spaniards, had conquer'd and possess'd themselves of almost all *Brazil*, the Dutch West-India Company then having Prince *Maurice de Nassau* for the General of all their Troops both by Sea and Land.

whenever any People should apply themselves to cultivate 'em, and to make Sugar-Mills, which might be done with a little Charge at any time; not only because there's all sorts of Wood in great plenty, as I have already said, but also because there is the Conveniency of Water for 'em in as great quantity as one can desire. There is nothing wanting but *Copper*, which we may supply in sending it thither from our own Country, and which we may be sure will turn to a considerable Account.

---

#### CHAP. XXXIII.

*Many other Commodities profitable for Traffick, which are found in this Country.*

**B**ESIDES these four sorts of Commodities that may be brought from these Lands that are discover'd, capable of enriching the whole World, there are also many others, which altho less rare, would not fail to bring a considerable Profit to a Nation; such as *Cotton*, that grows there abundantly, *Rocou*, that our Dyers use to make fine Scarlet, which is so esteem'd by all Nations that have Commerce with us; *Cassia*, and *Sarsaparilla*: there are made also several Oils for the healing of  
Wounds

Wounds which equal the best Balsams; there are found Gums and Rosins of an admirable Scent, and a certain Plant call'd *Pita*, which yields the best Thred in the World, and which the Ground produces in vast plenty; and a thousand other things, the Usefulness and Advantages of which are discover'd every day.

---

CHAP. XXXIV.

*Convincing Reasons to shew that many of the Mountains of this Countrey must needs contain Mines of Gold and Silver.*

I Do not speak of the many Mines of Gold and Silver, which are discover'd in the conquer'd Countries, nor those which Time may further discover there; but I am mightily mistaken in my Judgment, if many others may not be found in this Countrey more rich than all those of *Peru*, tho the famous Mountain of *Potosi* be comprehended in it: I speak not this without ground, nor only with a design to advance the Value of this great River, but found what I say upon Reason and Experience; because I have seen a great deal of Gold among the Indians whom we met as we went down the River, who gave us very certain Assurances, that there  
G were

were a great number of Gold and Silver Mines in their Country. This great River receives all the Waters of the richest Countries of *America*. On the South-side, those rich Rivers, some of which have their Sources round about *Potosi*, others at the Foot of *Guanico*, which is a Mountain near the City of *Lima*, flow into it; others come down from *Cusco*, others from *Cuenca*, and from *Gibaros*, which is the richest Country for Gold of any that has been yet discovered; so that on this side all the Rivers, Sources, little Springs and Rivulets, which run into the Sea for the space of 600 Leagues, that is from *Potosi* as far as *Quito*, render Homage to the River of *Amazons*, and pay it Tributes of Gold; as all the others likewise do that descend from the new Kingdom of *Granada*, which is no less rich in Gold than all the other Provinces of *Peru*. And seeing this River is the great Channel and principal Passage to all the richest Places of *Peru*, one may reasonably be assured, that it is the Sovereign Mistress of them all: besides, if that golden Lake hath all the Gold which the common Report ascribes to it; if the *Amazons* inhabit the richest Mountains in the World, as many that say they have seen 'em assure us; if the *Tocantins* abound so much in precious

†

Stones

*the River of Amazons.* 83

Stones and Gold, as some of the French, who have travell'd in their Country, do affirm; if the *Omagnas* with the Reputation of their vast Wealth, were once capable of casting all *Peru* into confusion, and of forcing the Viceroy to send a great Army under the Conduct of *Pedro de Orsua* to conquer their Country; all these Places adjoin to the River of *Amazons*: The Golden Lake, the *Amazons*, the *Tocantins*, and the *Omagnas* are upon the Banks of it, as shall be shewn hereafter; and in fine, this is the River that seems to be ordain'd by the Hand of God to be the Depository of those immense Treasures, which the Divine Providence has reserved to enrich the Greatest, most Valiant, and happiest Prince upon Earth.

---

C H A P. XXXV.

*The prodigious Extent of the Countries along this River.*

THE vast Extent of Land along the Banks of this great River, is as much as an Empire of 4000 Leagues in Circuit: I think I am not much out of the way in my Computation; for if it contains in length 1276 Leagues exactly measur'd (tho *Oreillane*, who first discover'd

and past through it, accounts it 1800 Leagues) if each River which enters into it either on the North or South-side, runs above 200 Leagues in length, and in many places above 400, without approaching any Country that is peopled by the Spaniard on any side, there being only various Nations of Indians that are yet unknown, to be found from this River to those Places so far distant, it must be granted that the breadth of this Empire would contain above 400 Leagues at least in the narrowest part of it, which with the 1126 Leagues in length of our Account (or 1800 Leagues by *Oreillane's* Computation) makes very little less than 4000 Leagues in Compass by the Rules of Cosmography and Arithmetick.

---

C H A P. XXXVI.

*The many different Nations which live in those Provinces, to the number of above one hundred and fifty.*

**A**LL the new World (it may well be so call'd) is peopled with Barbarians dispers'd in different Provinces, who make so many Nations, of which there are more than 150, of whom I can speak with good assurance. I shall give an account



count of their Names, and describe the Situation of their Countries, having seen part of 'em my self, and receiv'd Information of the rest by those Indians that have convers'd with 'em; the diversity of their Language makes the Distinction of those Nations, which are as large and as well peopl'd with Inhabitants as any of those we have seen in our whole Voyage: the Country is so well peopl'd that their Huts are near one another, and this not only in the extent of one and the same Nation, but throughout; so that the utmost Plantations of one Nation border so near to those of another, that they can hear one another cutting Wood from the last Village of one Nation into divers Plantations of the other. This near Neighbourhood does not at all serve to keep 'em in Amity one with another, but on the contrary, they are in continual War, and are daily killing and making Slaves of one another; this is the ordinary Misfortune of great multitudes, and if it were not for this, there would not be Ground enough to contain 'em. They appear valiant and resolute among themselves, but yet we never saw any in our whole Voyage who would stand their ground against our Souldiers; and none of these Barbarians had so much Boldness as to put themselves in a posture

of Defence, but only made use of that shift which those that are cowardly and faint-hearted have always imbraced, which is to betake themselves to flight, a thing very easy to them, because they go upon the Water in certain little Vessels so extremely light, that they make to the shore as swift as Lightning; and taking these Boats at their Backs, retire towards some Lake, of which there are a great many made by the River, where putting their Vessels again into the Water, when they are got in 'em, they defy all their Enemies let 'em be who they will, because they can't do the same with any Vessels they can have.

---

C H A P. XXXVII.

*The Arms which these People use both Offensive and Defensive.*

**A**LL their Arms consist in Javelins of a moderate length, and in Darts made of very hard Wood, which they work to so sharp a Point, that they can easily pierce a Man through with 'em, they throw 'em with so much dexterity. They have besides these another sort of Weapon call'd *Estolicas*, in the using of which the Souldiers of the great *Irica* King of  
Peru

*Peru* were very well skill'd ; this is a Staff of about six Foot long, and three Fingers broad, made as flat as a Board ; at the end of it on one side they fix a Bone made like a Tooth, to which they fasten an Arrow of six Foot long, the Point whereof is likewise headed with a Bone, or with a very hard piece of Wood, which they cut in the form of a barb'd Arrow-head ; so that where it hits, it remains fast, and hangs at its whole length : they take it in their Right-hand, with which they hold this Weapon by the lower end, and fixing the Arrow in the Bone that is in the upper end of it, they cast it with so much Force and Exactness, that they never miss doing Execution within 50 Paces. These Weapons serve 'em for War, for Hunting, and especially for Fishing ; so that whatever kind of Fish they can perceive in the River, they shoot it, let it be never so much cover'd under Water : and that which is yet more to be admir'd is, that with these Weapons they pierce Tortoises, when, after they are run into the River to hide themselves, they thrust their Heads out of the Water to take breath, as they commonly do from time to time after small Intervals ; they strike 'em with this Arrow through the Neck, which is the only place in which they can be wounded, because

it is not cover'd with the Shell. For Defensive Weapons they make use of Targets, which they make of Canes split in two, and which they so fitly and closely join one with another, that tho they are much lighter, yet they are no less strong than those others which they make of the Skin of the Fish *Pegebuey*, of which I have spoken before. Some of these Nations make use only of Bows and Arrows, which are esteem'd among all the others for the force and swiftness of 'em. There are abundance of venomous Herbs, with which some of these Nations make so subtile a Poison, that their Arrows being rub'd with it, never draw the least Blood without taking away the Life at the same time.

---

CHAP. XXXVIII.

*Their manner of living together. Of their Commerce, and of their making Boats for their Traffick.*

ALL the Nations that live on the Banks of this great River dwell together in great Colonies, and all their Commerce and Traffick is carried on by Water as it is at *Venice*, or at *Mexico*, in little Barks which they call *Canoos*; these they make with Cedar-wood, and the Providence of God

God provides these for 'em in such abundance, that without their being at the trouble of cutting 'em down, and of drawing 'em from the Mountains, they are sent to 'em with the Current of the River, which to supply the Necessities of these People, tears up Cedars for 'em from the highest Mountains of *Peru*, and brings 'em down to the foot of their Cottages, where they may every one chuse which they think most fit for their purpose: but the wonder is, that among so great number of Indians, every one of whom has need of one or two of these Trunks of Trees for the Service of his Family to make a Canoo or two (for indeed they all have of 'em) there's none of 'em has any more trouble to procure 'em, than that of going to the River side, and tying a Cord to the first Tree that floats along, and bringing it over against his Hut, where he stops it till the River retires; and as soon as it is dry, they with the same Industry apply themselves to hollow them, and make such Canoos of them as they want.

## C H A P. XXXIX.

*The Tools which they use to cut and cleave Wood, to plain it, and to make their Household Stuff.*

**A**LL the Tools which they have either to make their Canoos, to build their Huts, or to do other necessary Jobs, are Axes and Hatchets, not such as have been forg'd by ingenious Smiths, but such as have been form'd in their Fancies by Necessity, which is the Mother of Invention, and has taught 'em to cut the hardest part of the Tortoise-shell (which is that under the Belly of it) into Leaves of about a hand's-breadth, and not quite so thick as ones Hand. After having dry'd it in the Smoak, they whet it upon a Stone, then fasten it to a wooden Helve, and make use of this Tool to cut every thing they fancy, as well as if it were the best Ax that can be, but with a little more pains. They make their Hatchets of the same matter, and the Handle they put to 'em is a *Pege-beuy's* Jaw-bone, which Nature seems to have purposely fitted to this use. With these Instruments they finish all their Works, not only their Canoos, but their Tables, their Cupboards, their Seats, and their other Household Goods, and that as  
com-

completely as if they had the best Joiners Tools that are in use among us. There are some among these Nations who make their Axes of Stones, which they grind to an Edg with main Strength; these are much stronger than those of Tortoise-shell, so that they will cut down any great Tree which they have a mind to fell, with the less fear of breaking 'em, and with much more speed. Their Chizzels, Plains and Wimbles, which we use for the finest Works of Joinery (in which they work excellently well) are made of wild Hogs Teeth, and of the Horns of other Animals, which they graft in to Wooden Handles, and make use of 'em as well as we can do of the best that are made of Steel.

Almost all these Provinces produce Cotton more or less, but the greater part of 'em make no use of it for Clothing, but on the contrary, the most of 'em go stark naked, as well Men as Women, and are no more asham'd of appearing so than if they were in the primitive State of Innocency.

## CHAP. XL.

*The Religion of these People, and what they believe concerning their Idols. The Discourse of a Cacique on this Subject.*

THE Religion of these barbarous People is much alike, they all worship Idols, which they make with their own Hands; to one of them they ascribe the Authority of governing the Waters, and put a Fish in his Hand in token of his Power; they chuse others to preside over their Seed-time, and others to inspire 'em with Courage in their Battels; they say these Gods came down from Heaven on purpose to dwell with them, and to shew them Kindness. They don't signify their Adoration of these Idols by any outward Ceremonies, but on the contrary, seem to have forgotten 'em as soon as they have made 'em, and putting them in a Case let 'em lie, without taking any notice of 'em so long as they imagine they have no occasion for their Help; but when they are ready to march out to War, they set up the Idol in which they have plac'd the hopes of their Victories, at the Prow of their Canoos: so when they go a fishing, they take that Idol with 'em to which they attribute the Government of the Waters; yet



yet they have not so much Faith in any of 'em, but that they freely acknowledg that there may possibly be a God who is greater and more powerful than these. I made this Judgment upon what pass'd between us and one of these Savage People, who yet shew'd nothing in his Conversation that favour'd of a barbarous Education: This Indian had heard some of our Men speak of the Almighty Power of God; and considering what he had seen with his own Eyes, that our Army had navigated this great River throughout its whole Course, and after having pass'd through so many different Warlike Nations, was return'd without having receiv'd the least Damage or Prejudice from any of 'em, he thought this could not be, unless the Assistance and Power of God had conducted us: upon this Imagination he came to meet us, and with a great deal of Concern and disquiet of Mind signified to us, that for all the kind Entertainment he had given us, he desir'd no other Recompence but that we would leave him one of our Gods, seeing they were so good and powerful, that so he might take him and his Vassals into his Protection, that he might make 'em live in Peace and Health, and continually give 'em whatever they stood in need of for their Preservation. Our Men  
did

did not fail to promise him whatever he desir'd, and would fain have set up the Standard of the Cross in his Village for a certain Mark. This is a Custom the Portuguez have introduc'd throughout all places where Idols are worship'd; I know not whether they do it from a true Principle of Zeal, as the Action it self seems to signify, for there is a great deal of reason to doubt that they set up the sacred Sign of the Cross only for a specious Pretext to make Slaves of the poor Indians, whom they carry away from their very Houses, either for their own Service, or to sell 'em to others; which gave me an extreme Compassion for these People who don't seem unteachable, and might be more easily brought to the Knowledg of the true God by a courteous and gentle Carriage, than by all the Rigor that can be us'd upon 'em. What I have said is certainly true, that when the Portuguez have been kindly receiv'd and well treated by these honest and charitable Indians, they in return to all their Hospitality only leave 'em the Sign of the Cross, which they set up in the most eminent place of their Habitations, commanding 'em to keep this holy Sign with so great Care that it may never be defac'd; and after this when this Cross happens either to be thrown down by the  
Inju-

Injuries of the Weather, or to be worn out, or it may be to be maliciously broken in pieces by some of those Idolatrous Indians who bear no respect to it, the Portuguez never fail to condemn 'em all as guilty of the Profanation of the Cross, and as such, declare both them and all their Children and Childrens Children perpetual Slaves. This was the main reason that ingag'd me to forbid the Portuguez to leave the Cross among these People; besides, I was not willing that this *Cacique* that had ask'd us for a God, should have any occasion to believe that our God was a piece of Wood, and that this had the Power and Divinity of him that sav'd us on the Cross, for fear of confirming him in Idolatry. I therefore comforted him the best I could, and told him the God we worship'd would be always with him, and advis'd him to pray to him for whatever he wanted, and to put his Trust intirely in him, telling him I believ'd he would one day favour him with the Knowledg of the true Religion. By this it appears that this Indian did not believe his Idols were powerful Gods, seeing he was so ready to forsake 'em to worship a greater Deity, if we would have given him one.

## C H A P. XLI.

*The Discourses of two other Caciques, which shew the Capacity of those Peoples Minds.*

**A**Nother of these Barbarians gave us to understand that his Sentiments were not different from those of the former which we have been relating. This Indian who had more Knowledg, but less Honesty than the other, knowing that there was no Divinity, nor any Power in his Idols, set up himself for the God of all his Country. We receiv'd Information of this some Leagues before we arriv'd at the place where he dwelt, and sent him word that we were coming to bring him Tidings of the true God, who was much more powerful than he could pretend to be, and entreated him not to retire from his House, but to wait for our Arrival. He did so, and we had scarce set our Feet to Land on the shore of this Country, but he came to us big with Curiosity to enquire what News we could tell him of that God, about whom we had sent such a Message to him. I held a long Discourse with him, to inform him what God was; but because he would needs see with his own Eyes the God that I preach'd to him, I was forc'd to leave him in his own Blindness: He told  
me

me himself was God, and begotten by the Sun ; affirming that his Soul went every Night into Heaven to give Orders for the succeeding Day, and to regulate the Government of the Universe ; such was the Insolence and Pride of this Savage Creature.

Another of 'em shew'd himself much more reasonable ; for when I was enquiring of him how it came to pass, that seeing his Companions retir'd into the Mountains at the approach of our Fleet, he alone with a few of his Relations durst come near us, and expose themselves to lie at our Mercy without fear. He answer'd that he had consider'd that such Men as had once got up that River in spite of so many Enemies, and were return'd in like manner without receiving any harm, could be no less than the Lords of this great River, and would be sure frequently to return to bring it into Subjection, and to people it with new Inhabitants ; and the case being thus, he was not willing to live always in fear and dread in his House, but chose rather to render himself to 'em in time, and willingly to acknowledg them for his Masters and Friends, whom the others would one day be constrain'd to receive and serve by Force.

## C H A P. XLII.

*The Veneration they have for their Wizards,  
and the Ceremonies of their Funerals.*

LET us now resume the Thred of our History, and return to the Customs of our Indians. 'Tis very remarkable how much Esteem and Respect all these Nations bear to those Wizards they have among 'em, which proceeds not so much from the Love they have for 'em, as from the continual Fear they live in of receiving some Mischief or other from their Hands. There is a certain House devoted to the use of these Sorcerers, in which they perform their superstitious Exercises, and converse with the Devil, (a very common thing with 'em in this Place) which serves for no other purpose. They also keep the dead Bones of these Sorcerers with as much Veneration as if they were the Reliques of Saints: when they have put their Bones altogether, they hang 'em in the Air in the same Cotton Beds those Wizards us'd to lie in while alive. These are their Masters, their Preachers, their Counsellors, and their Guides: They have recourse to them in their Doubts to obtain the Resolution of 'em; and when they

they are in the greatest Rage against their Enemies, they apply themselves to these Conjurers for poisonous Herbs, by which they execute their Revenge upon 'em.

For the Burial of their Dead there are different Ceremonies among 'em; for some keep 'em in their own Houses, that by having 'em always before their Eyes, they may (as they pretend) on all Occasions be put in mind of Death: But certainly if they did it for this intention, one would think they should keep the Remains of their Dead in better order than they do. Others burn their Carcases in great Pits, and with them all the deceased Party possess'd when alive: But in short, they all, one as well as another, celebrate their Funerals for many Days together, with continual Mourning and Weeping, which they only interrupt with Drinking, and that they do even to the Excess of Drunkenness.

---

C H A P. XLIII.

*The Constitution of their Bodies, and the Disposition of their Minds; their Dexterity, Manners, and Inclinations.*

**I**T may be said in general, that all these People are well made; they have an  
H 2 agree-

agreeable Air, and a Complexion much less tauny than that of the *Brazilians*; they have a ready Wit, and a great deal of Dexterity in the Exercise of their Weapons; their Conversation is sweet and peaceable, and their Inclinations very agreeable. We had sufficient Opportunity of knowing this by the Commerce we had with many of them: For they presently had such a good Opinion of us, that they did not make the least difficulty of trusting their Lives and all they had besides in our Hands. Some of them continued with us a considerable time, eating and drinking with our Men without shewing the least Suspicion or Apprehension of Danger: Nay they had the Civility to give us their Huts to lodge in, while several of their Families crowded themselves in one or two, that we might have the Accommodation of the rest. The Indians we had with us offer'd 'em a thousand insolent Affronts, and we could not possibly hinder 'em from insulting over 'em; but they patiently bore all, and without the least Resentment. All this, together with the slender Veneration they seem to have for their Idols, give us great ground to hope, that if ever the Knowledge of the true God of Heaven and Earth, and the Doctrine of the Gospel should be preach'd  
to



to 'em, there will be a great prospect of their becoming good Christians.

---

C H A P. XLIV.

*The principal Mouths by which the River of Amazons empties it self into the Sea, and the chief Rivers of Peru that run into the Amazone.*

**W**E have hitherto treated in general of this Noble and Famous River of *Amazons*; now 'tis but reasonable we should enter upon the Detail of our Account, and speak particularly of its Sources and Passages: I shall therefore give a Relation of its Ports, and distinctly observe all the Rivers that feed it, and maintain its prodigious Greatness. I shall even advance into all the Countries it waters: I shall make observation of its Depths in several Parts of it, and of the particular Inclinations of the many sorts of People it maintains. I design to omit nothing that's worthy of notice, because I have been an Eye-witness of it; and having been sent by one of the greatest Monarchs in Christendom, on purpose to make accurate Observations on every thing upon this great River, it may be I am more capable than another to give an account of

what was given me in charge. I shall say nothing of the principal Mouth of this River into the Ocean on the side of *Para*; for it has long since been known by all that sail into *America*; it is well known that it lies under the Line at the utmost Confines of *Brazil*: Nor shall I say any thing of that Mouth of our River by which the Tyrant *López Dagnyrre* invaded the Island of *La Trinidad*; because I never saw it, and those that have been there have told me there is no direct Entrance into the River of *Amazons* by the Mouth, it being the Mouth of another River that has Communication with the *Amazon* by several Arms, which from one space to another extend themselves far from it, and enter into the Sea with this other River. My Intention is only to give the Inhabitants of the conquer'd Countries of *Peru* an account of the Passages they have to the River of *Amazons*, or rather of the Rivers of each Province that empty themselves into it. I have already said, that as we came down it we saw its Banks open'd by many Rivers and Rivulets both on the South and North sides: Therefore if any embark on these Rivers, they must necessarily fall into the *Amazon*. But because 'tis not certainly known from what Provinces they draw their Original, and upon what

what Towns their Sources border; and because 'tis yet less known in those places whence they spring, whether they fall into this great River or no, I shall endeavour to remove these Doubts, and shall treat of eight of 'em, which I have taken particular notice of, and all that know these Provinces will confirm the Report I give. Three of 'em pass from the side of the *Amazone*, and go down toward the new Kingdom of *Granada*: Four others we saw on the South-side; and there's another, which runs under the Equinoctial Line, and at length empties it self into this great River.

---

CHAP. XLV.

*Of the Rivers of Caqueta, Putomayo, and Aguarcio, which come from the new Kingdom of Granada, and enter into the River Amazone on the North-side.*

**T**He first Entrance that we discover'd to fall into this River (which may be termed a Sea of fresh Water) on that side that looks towards the new Kingdom of *Granada*, is through the Province of *Micoa* in the Government of *Popayan*, following the Current of the great River *Caqueta*, into which all those others that descend on the side of *St. Foy*,

*Bogota*, *Jimanas*, and *Cagnan*, come to render Homage as to their Lady and Mistress. This River is very famous in the Countrey for the Numbers of Indians that inhabit the Banks of it. It has a great many Arms that extend themselves into very remote Provinces, and return to join themselves to that Body from which they separated from a great multitude of Islands, that are all inhabited by an infinite number of wild People. This River continually takes its Course parallel with the *Amazone*, always running along by it, tho at a considerable distance, and from one Place to another sending Arms of Water towards it, big enough to be taken each of 'em for whole Rivers; at last gathering it self together at the Latitude of four degrees, it discharges it self into our River: and 'tis by that Arm of it, which is nearest to the Province of the *Aguas*, that one must directly take ones Course to go down unto the *Amazone*; because there are some Arms that tend towards the North; and they that shall be so imprudent as to embark on this Arm, will certainly be expos'd to the same Danger that befel Capt. *Fernand Perez de Quesada*, who having embarked on the *Caquetta* with 300 Men, and suffered himself to be carried along the side of *St. Foy*,

*Foy*, arrived in the Province of *Algodonal*, from whence he was forced to retire with much more haste than he came, tho he was so well attended with a good number of Men.

The second most remarkable Entrance we find on the North side is by the Town of *Pasto*, which also depends on the Government of *Popayan*. From this Town you must cross the neighbouring Mountains called the *Cordeliers*, which is a difficult incommodious Journey, because of the badness of the Ways, which you must travel partly on Foot, and the rest on Horse-back. You'l at length arrive at the River *Putomayo*, on which you must embark; and sailing down it, it will bring into the famous River of *Amazons*, at the Latitude of two Degrees and a half, and 330 Leagues below the Port of *Napo*. The same Way that leads to the River *Putomayo*, leads in like manner to the River *Aguarico*; because when you leave the Mountains, 'tis but turning near *Sucumbios*, and near that Town you meet the River *Aguarico*, otherwise call'd the golden River: you need only follow the Stream of it to enter into the *Amazone*, and the Entrance of it is almost under the Line, where the Province of the long-hair'd Indians begins ninety Leagues below the Port  
of

of *Napo*. This is the third Passage, which is discover'd into the River of *Amazons* on the North side.

---

C H A P. XLVI.

*Of the River Coca, and the River Pagamino, which enter into the Amazone on the South side.*

**U**Nder the Line there is another River, by which one may descend into the *Amazone*; it passes across the Province of *Quixos*, and is nearest to the City of *Quito*, beginning at the City of the *Cofanes*, where it takes the Name of *Coca*, and from all along hence it amasses together such great Quantities of Water, that it may well be said to make the principal of all those Channels that compose this great Fresh-water Sea. The Navigation of this River is very troublesom and difficult, by reason of the great Sreams of Water that trouble it all along, till it meets the River *Napo*; but this last, and the others that enter into the *Amazone* on the other side of the Line toward the South, are navigated with much more ease. The first of these is the River *Pagamino*, which is none of the most commodious and pleasant: it is three days Journey by Land from the  
City

City of *Avila*, which likewise belongs to the Government of the *Quixos*. 'Twas by this River the Portuguez Fleet enter'd, and landed within the Jurisdiction of *Quito*. This River enters into the *Amazone* below the River *Quito*, and the *Napo*, at a place call'd *La Junta de los Rios*, twenty five Leagues below the Port of *Napo*. When the Portuguez returned, we found a better way to join their Fleet than that which they lighted on in coming into this Country: For we went strait from *Quito* to *Archidoua*, which likewise belongs to the Government of the *Quixos*, and is under the Jurisdiction of *Quito*; from whence by one day's Journey only (which we travelled on foot, it being in the Winter, that is in the time of the Rains, but might be performed on Horse-back at any other Season) we arrived at the Port of the River *Napo*. This River is great and rich, and all the Inhabitants of the neighbouring Ports under the Government of *Quito* account it the Depository of their Treasures; for they every Year gather from its Shores all the Gold they need to defray the Expence of their Families. Besides, this River abounds with Fish, and the Fields near it are full of Game; the Soil is very good, and requires but little Charge to cultivate it: It returns the Husbandman

bandman prodigious quantities of all sorts of Grain: This is the principal and best Way that can be taken to go from the Province of *Quito* to the River of *Amazons*; 'tis much more commodious and easy than all the rest. Yet I have heard on that side, that near the Town of *Ambatte*, which is 10 Leagues from *Quito* on the River *Bamba*, there is another River that comes to discharge it self into the *Amazone*, and that there is in it but one fall of Water caus'd by the Currents, that at all obstructs the Navigation of it: This way is very commodious to bring one into this great River about 60 or 70 Leagues lower than the Port of *Napo*, by which means we may cross through the whole Province of the *Quixos*.

---

CHAP. XLVII.

*Of the Rivers of Curaray and Maragnon.*

THE seventh way of coming at the River *Amazone* is on the side of the Province of the *Macas*, which also appertains to the Government and Jurisdiction of *Quito*; from the Mountains of this Province there descends a great River call'd *Curaray*, by following the Course of which you'll fall into this great River at 2 degrees  
Lati-



Latitude, and 150 Leagues below the Port of *Napo*: all the space of Land is well peopled with several different Nations.

The eighth and last Passage into our great River is on the side of *St. Jago*, from the Mountains of the Province of the *Maguas*, the most powerful of all the Rivers that render Tribute to the *Amazone*: It waters all that great Country so distant from it, and is there call'd *Maragnon*; but at its Mouth, and some Leagues higher, it bears the Name of *Tumburagna*. This River enters into the *Amazone* at four degrees Latitude, and more than 300 Leagues above the Mouth of it; it is so deep, and has such impetuous Currents, that the Navigation of it is troublesome, and somewhat dangerous: but the Assurances we have that there are great numbers of Idolatrous and Barbarous Indians inhabiting these large Countries it waters, will make those that are animated with Zeal for the Glory of God, and the Salvation of Souls, easily surmount some Difficulties. It was to make an Essay of so noble an Enterprize, that in the beginning of the Year 1638, two of our Society pass'd through the Province of the *Maguas* in quest of these large Countries, from whom I receiv'd a great many Letters, in which they give an account of the endless Extent of this River,  
and

and of the innumerable Provinces they receiv'd certain Intelligence of from time to time. This River *Maragnon* joins with *Amazon* 230 Leagues below the Port of *Napo*.

---

CHAP. XLVIII. *Of the River Napo.*

**T**His River *Napo*, of which I have had occasion to speak so often, has its Source at the foot of a great Defart call'd *Aulizana*, which is 18 Leagues from *Quito*; and, which is very wonderful, tho this Place is so near the Equinoctial Line, yet this as well as many other Plains that are upon those Mountains call'd the *Cordeliers*, is always cover'd with Snow, that serves to temper the Heat under the Torrid Zone, which is so excessive, that one would think it should render all those Countries not habitable (as *St. Augustin* says of them) which yet by means of this perpetual Refreshment, are the most temperate and serene Regions that have been discover'd since the Age wherein that great Saint flourish'd. This River of *Napo* from its Source takes its Course between great Rocks, which render it unnavigable till it comes to touch that place which is call'd the Port of *Napo*, where the *Vezinos*, or Inhabitants  
of

of *Archidoua*, have their Plantations and Gardens; there it becomes more smooth, and less rapid, and bears upon its Waters those little Canoos the Indians use for their Traffick: however, it retains something of its Roughness and Impetuosity for five or six Leagues below this Port; and then all on a sudden becomes calm and smooth, and so remains till it enters into the River *Coca*, which makes the space of about 25 Leagues; during which space it has a good Bottom, and a smooth Course, and affords the largest Vessels a very safe Passage. The Conjunction it makes with the River *Coca* is call'd *La Junta de los Rios*, the joining of the Rivers; and this is reported to have been the place where *Francis d' Oreillane* and his Men arriv'd, and made that Brigantine in which he sailed and discover'd all the River of *Amazons*.

---

CH A P. XLIX.

*Of the Town of Anose where Capt. John de Palacios dwelt, with whom there were the two Lay-Friers who made their Escape down to Para (spoken of before.)*

**F**Orty seven Leagues below the place where these Rivers join, on the South-side, is situated the Town of *Anose*, which is

is a Plantation made by Capt. *John de Palacios*, who (as I said before) was kill'd by the Inhabitants of the Country: 18 Leagues below this Town on the North-side lies the River *Agarico*, which enters into the *Amazone*; this River is sufficiently famous not only for its Air, which is none of the best, but also for the quantity of Gold that is found in its Sands, from whence it has had the Name of the Golden River these hundred Years. At the Mouth of it on one side as well as t'other of the River of *Amazons* begins the great Province of the long-hair'd Indians, which extends on the North-side for above 180 Leagues, and continually receives great quantities of Water from the *Amazone*, which makes divers Lakes of a great Compass and Depth. The first Notices that the Inhabitants of *Quito* receiv'd of this Country gave 'em a very great desire to make a Conquest of it, because of the great number of Indians with which this Province is peopled. And indeed there have been at several times some Essays of this kind made, but always in vain, witness the last of 'em that had such bad Success, when Capt. *John de Palacios* was kill'd, as has been already said.

CHAP. L.

*The Place where General Texeira left his Fleet of Portuguez.*

Was in this Province of the long-hair'd Indians at the Mouth of the River which bears their Name, and enters into the *Amazone* 20 Leagues below the River again, that by the Order of General *Texeira* forty Portuguez of his Fleet, with 200 of the Indians they brought with 'em, continued constantly for the space of eleven Months: At first they found nothing but good Entertainment of all sorts from the Inhabitants of the Country, to whom in return they gave all Necessaries they had occasion for; but this did not continue long. This was too great a Familiarity for Men that knew themselves guilty of the death of the Spanish Captain; for they being the Authors of this Fact, knew well enough that the Blood they had shed cry'd for Vengeance against 'em, and therefore being under Apprehensions of being chastis'd for their Boldness on the least occasion that should offer, they mutinied, and after they had kill'd three of our Indians, took up Arms to defend their Lives and Lands. The Portuguez on this occasion acted like themselves, and presently sought to be reveng'd; for it being contrary to their Humour to put up Injuries,

or to suffer Indians to take the liberty of acting with so much Insolence as this, they betook themselves to Arms, and with their wonted Courage, for which they are so famous, flew upon their Enemies, and repuls'd them with so much Vigor, that with the loss of a very few Men they killed a considerable number of Indians, and took above 70 of 'em Prisoners; some of whom died in the places of their Confinement, and the rest made their Escape, so that in a little time there was not one of them left. These Portuguez did not get much by their Victory, for they now found themselves reduc'd to such Extremity, that they saw they must either perish for want of Food, or else be oblig'd to go with their Swords in their hands to fetch Provision out of the very Mouths of their Enemies. Accordingly they resolv'd to make Incurfions into the Country, and either by fair means or foul to get a Supply for their pinching Necessities. Some of 'em went out to fight, and others kept the Camp; but both the one and the other in spite of all their Bravery did not fail to meet with frequent and violent Insults from their Enemies, who omitted no fit occasion to give 'em all sorts of Alarms, and to do 'em all the Mischief they could, especially upon the River, where they surpriz'd a great many of their Vessels, some of which they pillaged, and brake others of 'em in pieces:

†

and

and yet this was not the greatest Damage they did our Men; for they laid Ambuscades for our Indians, and cut the Throats of all that fell into their hands: 'Tis true, for every Man they kill'd, the Portuguez kill'd six of them; but this Chastisement was nothing comparable to what the Portuguez used to make the Indians suffer for such kind of Revolts. These People were call'd by the Spaniards who saw them first, the Hairy Indians, because throughout this Province the Men as well as the Women wear their Hair quite down to their Knees. Their Weapons are Darts, their Houses are Huts made very neatly and curiously with the Branches of Palm-Trees: Their Food is like that of all the other Indians upon the *Amazone*. They are always in War with their Neighbours at the Head of this Province of the long-hair'd Savages on the South-side; on the other side of the River of *Amazons*, they have for their Neighbours the *Avixiras*, the *Yurusnies*, the *Zaparas*, and the *Yquitos*, who are on one side enclosed by the River *Curaray*, and on the other by the *Amazone*, into which the former empties it self 4 Leagues below the Province of the long-hair'd Indians, at near two degrees Latitude. Eighty Leagues below *Curaray* on the same South-side, the famous River *Tumburagua*, which, as I said before, descends from the Province of the *Maynas*, by the

Name of *Maragnon*, enters into the *Amazon*; and is so impetuous and violent, that it preserves its Waters entirely together, while it runs with its ordinary Swiftnes several Leagues forward into the *Amazon* without mixing with it, which makes it extend above a League in Breadth at its Mouth: at length it acknowledges the Superiority of the *Amazon*, and pays it not only the ordinary Tribute, which the other Rivers render it, but another more considerable Advantage besides of many sorts of Fish, that are not found in the River of *Amazons*, till you come to the Mouth of this River.

---

C H A P. LI.

*The Province of the Aguas, their Manners and Customs.*

Sixty Leagues below the River *Tumburagua* begins the Province of the *Aguas*, which is the most fertile and spacious of all the Provinces we found along this great River of *Amazons*; the Spaniards vulgarly call it *Omaguas*, by a corruption of its proper Name; and to make it answer to the Situation of their Dwellings; because the Word *Aguas* in their Language signifies *without*, or *abroad*. This Province is above 200 Leagues in length, and is so well peopled, that the Villages are  
situate



situate very close one to another; so that almost as soon as you are past one, you discover another. The Breadth of this Country in all appearance is but of small extent, it being no greater than that of our River; for the Habitations of these People are in all the Islands throughout the whole Length of it, which are in great number, and some of which are very spacious: and considering they are all either peopled, or at least cultivated for the Sustainance of the Inhabitants, one may easily imagine there must needs be vast numbers of Indians in a Country that extends 200 Leagues in Length. This Nation is the most reasonable and best civilized of all those that dwell along this River. This Advantage they received from those that not long since went down amongst 'em from the Countrey of the *Quixos*; where after having had Peace with the Spaniards for a long time, they were at last wearied with the ill Treatment they received from 'em, and embarking in their Canoos, suffered themselves to be carried down with the Stream of the River, till they met with other Indians of their Nation, upon whose Strength and Power they could rely, and accordingly took up their Residence with 'em. These last Comers introduc'd among the others several things they had seen practised by the Spaniards, and taught 'em how to live after

a more civil and regular manner. They were all clothed, both Men and Women, with all the Decency imaginable; their Garments are made of Cotton, of which they gather a prodigious quantity; and they do not only make Stuffs enough for their own use, but make a great many to sell to their Neighbours, who are mightily taken (and that not without reason) with the Beauty of those pretty Works with which they deck their Stuffs: they make some very thin Clothes, which are not only woven with Threds of different Colours, but the Paint of 'em is disposed with so much Art in the weaving, that the different Threds can't be distinguished one from another. They are so submissive and obedient to their principal Caciques, that these whom they look upon as their Princes, need speak but a Word to have whatever they command put in execution.

This whole Nation has been so long accustomed to make their Heads flat, that as soon as their Children are born they put them in a kind of Press; forcing Nature after this manner with one little Board, which they hold upon the Forehead, and another much larger, which they put behind the Head, and which serves them for a Cradle; and all the rest of the Body of the new-born Infant is as it were inclos'd with this piece of Wood: they lay the Child upon his Back,  
and

and this Board being bound fast to that which is upon the Forehead, they make the Head of the Child almost as flat as ones Hand; thus there being no room for the Head to grow, but by spreading it self wide from one Ear to the other, they are extremely disfigured by this violent Artifice.

The *Aguas* have perpetual War with several other Nations both on the one and the other side of the River. On the South side among other Enemies they have the *Curinas*, who are so numerous, that they not only very well defend themselves on the side of the River from innumerable Multitudes of the *Aguas*; but at the same time likewise sustain the Efforts and Shocks of other Nations, that come a great way down the Countrey to make War with them. On the North side the *Zæunas* are Enemies to the *Aguas*, and are, by the Accounts I have had of them, no less numerous, nor less stout than the *Curinas*; which appears in that they maintain a War against a great number of Enemies, that come down from Places a great way up in the Country.

## C H A P. LII.

*The Love these People have for the Captives they take in War, and the Calumny they lie under in being reported to eat 'em.*

**T**Hese *Aguas* make Slaves of all the Prisoners they take in War, and use 'em for all kinds of Service; however they treat 'em with so much Love and Kindness, that they make 'em eat with themselves; and there's nothing in the World displeases 'em more, than to desire 'em to sell 'em, as we found by experience on several occasions: I remember once at our Arrival at an Indian Town, they received us not only with all the Marks of Peace and Amity, but even with all the Tokens of extraordinary Joy: They offer'd us all they had for our Sustenance, without requiring any thing in return: We on our parts shewed that Civility to them that became us; we bought their painted Cotton-Cloth, which they very willingly parted with; we desired 'em to sell us some Canoos, which are better to them than the best and swiftest Horses, and they presently offer'd 'em to us; but when we began to talk with 'em about their Slaves, and to importune 'em to sell us some of 'em, this was to them the most uncivil and inhumane Discourse that could be: one of them presently gave

US

us to understand that he would no longer keep company with us; another shew'd himself mightily troubled at the matter: On the one hand they were very diligent to hide 'em from us, on the other to get some of 'em that were with us out of our Hands; in a word, they gave us Signs enough to convince us, that they had a greater esteem for their Slaves than for all the rest of their Goods, and that they had rather part with all they possess'd besides than part with them. And this being the truth of the matter, 'tis a malicious thing of the Portuguez to report that the reason why the *Aguas* are unwilling to sell their Slaves, is because they fatten 'em, and keep 'em to eat at their Feasts: This is a Calumny they have invented, to palliate the Cruelties they have exercised upon these poor Wretches. I may farther add, that at least as far as concerns the Nation of the *Aguas* I have found the contrary true by the Testimony of two Indians that were Natives of *Para*, who came up with the Portuguez as far as *Quito*, and ran away when they were arriv'd there; who falling into the hands of these People, were made Slaves, and remained with them eight Months: these assured me they had been out with them at their Wars, and that they never saw 'em eat any of their Enemies, when they had taken 'em, and made Slaves of 'em: 'twas true indeed (they said) when they

they had taken any of their Enemies that had the Reputation of being Valiant and Great, they kill'd 'em at their Feasts and Assemblies, only out of fear of sustaining some considerable Damage by 'em, if they should suffer 'em to live; but that they did not eat these neither when they had kill'd 'em, but when they had cut off their Heads, which they us'd to hang up in their Huts as Trophies, they roll'd their Bodies into the River.

I don't deny that there are some *Caribees* in those Parts that eat their Enemies without any Sentiments of Horror; but this is a Custom peculiar to them, and is not practised among other Indians. And this I desire may be taken notice of and credited, that Human Flesh has never been sold in any of the Publick Shambles of this Nation, as the Portuguez have reported; who under the pretence of revenging such kind of Cruelties, commit those that are incomparably greater themselves, since they are so inhuman and barbarous, as to make Slaves of those that were born free and independent.

CHAP. LIII.

*The great Cold in those parts under the Line in June, July and August, and the reason of it.*

**A**fter we were got down about 100 Leagues more or less into the Country of the *Aguas*, and so had pass'd about half way through this vast Province, we arriv'd at a Town of this Nation, where we were obliged to continue three days; we there felt it so extreme cold, that those of us that were born and bred in the coldest Province of *Spain*, were constrain'd to put on more Clothes. This so sudden change of the Temper of the Air surpriz'd me, and gave me the Curiosity to enquire the Cause of it, of the People of the Country: they told me it was no unusual thing in their Quarters, that every Year for three Moons (for thus they count and mean for three Months) they felt the same Cold; these three Months are *June*, *July* and *August*: but this Answer did not satisfy me, who was willing to have a more solid and perfect knowledg of the reason of this so piercing Cold. Upon Consideration I found that the Winds passing through that vast and mountainous Desert, which is situate a great way up in the Country on the South-side, all those three Months, and so bringing along with them the cold Air occasion'd by the  
Snow

Snow with which those Desert Mountains are cover'd, cause these surprizing Effects in the Neighbouring Countries under the Torrid Zone. And for this reason I don't question but the Situation of this Country is capable of making the Ground produce good Wheat, and all other sorts of Grain and Fruits, that grow in the Soil of *Quito*, which is in like manner situated under the Line, or very near it, and yet is made very fertile and fit for all sorts of Grain and Fruits, and this by reason of that fresh Air brought thither by the Winds that come off from the Mountains which are cover'd with Snow.

---

CHAP. LIV.

*Of the River Putomayo, which comes from the new Kingdom of Granada, and the River Yotau, which comes from the Neighbourhood of the City of Cusco.*

Sixteen Leagues below the place where we felt so much Cold, on the North-side we met with the great River *Putomayo*, which is so famous in the Government of *Popayan* in the new Kingdom of *Granada*. This is a very great and wide River, because it receives 30 other very considerable Rivers before it falls into the *Amazone*. Those that inhabit the places about its Mouth call it *Iza*,  
it



it comes down from the Mountains of *Pasto* in the Kingdom of *Granada*: there's abundance of Gold found in the Sand and Gravel of it; and we were assur'd that the Banks of it were extremely well peopled, so that a Troop of Spanish Souldiers coming upon this River, found Enemies enow to constrain 'em to retire with some loss. The Names of the Natives that inhabit these Parts are the *Yurinas*, the *Guaraicds*, the *Parianas*, the *Zyas*, the *Ahyves*, the *Cuvos*; and those that are nearest the Source dwell on both sides of the River, as being the Lords and Masters of it, and are call'd the *Omaguas*; the *Aguas* of the Islands call 'em the true *Omaguas*.

Fifty Leagues below this Mouth of *Puto-mayo*, we found on the other side the Mouth of another fine large River, which takes its Rise near *Cusco*, and enters into the *Amazone* at the Latitude of three degrees and a half; the Natives call it *Yosau*, and 'tis esteem'd above all the rest for its Riches, and for the great number of People it maintains; the Names of whom are these, the *Tepanas*, the *Gavains*, the *Ozuanas*, the *Morvas*, the *Nau-nos*, the *Conomamas*, the *Mariavas*, and the *Omaguas*, which are the last Nation that dwell upon this River towards *Peru*, and by consequence are the nearest Neighbours the Spaniards have on that side. This Nation is accounted to be very rich in Gold, because they wear

wear great Plates of Gold hanging at their Ears and Noftrils: and if I don't mistake, these Indians are the same with those I have read of in the History of the Tyrant *Lopez Daguirre*, to whose Country *Pedro d'Orsua* was sent by the Vice-roy of *Peru* to make a Discovery of it, because of the great Reputation they had of being the most wealthy People in *America*; however, *Pedro d'Orsua* miss'd his way, and instead of taking the River *Yotau*, sail'd upon an Arm of another River which enters into the *Amazone* some Leagues below the other; so that when he was fallen down into the *Amazone*, he found himself so far below these People, whose Country he went to discover, that he perceiv'd it impossible to get up to 'em, not only because of the Impetuosity of the Currents, against which he was afraid to hazard himself, but likewise because of the Discontent all his Souldiers express'd at so difficult an Enterprize. This River *Yotau* abounds with Fish, and its Banks with all sorts of Venison and wild Fowl; and is besides very Navigable, because it has a good Bottom, and a very gentle Current, by what I have been able to learn from those that dwell upon its Banks.

CHAP. LV.

*The utmost Borders of the People call'd the Aguas, who possess the space of 54 Leagues along this River, and the River Yurva which comes from the side of Cusco.*

**I**N following the Course of the River of *Amazons* we came down about fourteen Leagues lower, and arriv'd at the utmost Bounds of the long Province of the *Aguas*, which is a Town well peopled, wherein they keep a strong Garison; this being the principal Fort they have on that side to resist the Irruptions of their Enemies for the space of above 54 Leagues along this River. They are the sole Masters of its Banks, so that their Enemies don't possess an Inch of Land there: but the Bounds of their Country are so narrow, that from the Banks of the River you may see the remotest Villages they have on the Continent. They have a thousand small Rivers that fall into the *Amazone*, and that serve to convey 'em into the Country for what they want; on the North-side the *Curis* and the *Quirabas* are their Enemies, and the *Cachiguaras* and the *Jucuris* on the South-side. We could not come at the sight of these Nations, because our Orders would not permit us to go so high into the Country; but we discover'd the Mouth of a River which we may  
with

with good reason call the River of *Cusco*, because, according to the Relation which I have seen of the Voyage of *Francis Oreillane*, this River goes North and South from the City of *Cusco*; it enters into the *Amazon* at the Latitude of 5 degrees, and at 24 Leagues distance from the last great Village of the *Aguas*. The Natives call it *Yurna*; the Country is well peopled, and on the Right-hand, as you enter into this River against the Stream, are the same People I have spoken of before, who inhabit the Banks of the River *Totau*; for they extend themselves from the Banks of one of these Rivers to the other, and so dwell between 'em both, almost as in an Island; and, if I am not mistaken, it was by this last River that *Pedro d' Orsua* came down from *Peru* into the *Amazon*.

---

CHAP. LVI.

*Of the Nation of the Curuzicaris who possess the space of 24 Leagues along this River: Of their Husbandry, and Ingenuity in making all sorts of Utensils, and Earthen Ware.*

**T**Wenty eight Leagues below the River *Yurva*, on the same South-side, begins the great and potent Nation of the *Curuzicaris*, in a Country all cover'd with Mountains and Precipices. This Nation inhabits only

only the Bank of the *Amazone* on the South-side, and possesses above 24 Leagues of it in length. This People is so numerous, that their Villages are very near one another, so that we could scarce make four hours sail, but we found new Plantations; and sometimes we found their Towns so long, that we could not get clear of 'em in half a day. We found abundance of those Villages without one Soul in 'em, all the Inhabitants being frightened away with the false News, that we put all to Fire and Sword, and that the least Evil they were to expect from us, was to be all made Slaves: The greatest part of 'em retir'd as far as the Mountains: But tho these People are so timorous, that they may well be term'd the greatest Cowards upon the River of *Amazons*, yet we saw in all their Houses the Marks of a great deal of good Husbandry and Neatness; for we found abundance of Provisions which they had laid up in store, and which is more, a great deal of Household-goods, amongst which, the Vessels they had made to eat and drink in, were the neatest and most commodious of any we had yet seen through the whole Course of this great River. They have in the Marshy Places where they dwell, a sort of Earth very good to make all kinds of Vessels; of this they make great Pots or Jars, in which they make their Drink and knead their Dough, and Pans and Pots to boil

in, and a sort of Ovens in which they bake their Bread; they likewise make Drinking-Cups and Basons of it, and very neat Frying-pans: They make great quantities of all these Utensils to carry on the Trade they have with all the neighbouring Nations, who having occasion for all these pieces of Household-stuff come from all Quarters to procure 'em in this Country, and carry them away in great Burdens, giving in exchange for 'em all sorts of things this People want, which are not produc'd in their own Country. The first Village the Portuguez of our Fleet met with in coming up the River of *Amazons*, they call'd the Golden Town, because they found some pieces of Gold there, which these People had receiv'd in exchange from those Indians that wear Plates of Gold at their Ears and Noses. This Gold was carried to *Quito*, and upon trial the greatest part of it was found of the Fineness of twenty three Carrats: But the Natives observing the Greediness of our Men, and how eagerly they hunted after more of these little Plates of Gold, took care to hide 'em all, so that in a little time they were none of 'em to be found. And they took such exact care of the business at our return, that altho we found a great many of these Indians, yet there was but one of 'em that had these Ear-pendants, and those very small ones, which I bought of him.

†

C H A P.

CHAP. LVII.

*Of the Golden Mine, and the River Yquyari which springs out of it, and yields all those Plates of Gold, of which those People make their Pendants.*

THE Portuguez Fleet, as they came from *Para* to discover this great River of *Amazons*, could not get any certain knowledg of many things that are to be met with there, because they came away without Interpreters, and could obtain none to inform 'em and give 'em a faithful account of things: So that if the Portuguez pretend to give a good account of any Matter, it must be only from what they have learn'd of the Indians by Signs, which are ordinarily very uncertain and equivocal, because every one is apt to apply them to what his Fancy leads him; these Difficulties ceas'd at their return, and it pleas'd God to favour us with such good Interpreters, that I can affirm that all that is contain'd in this Relation, is written upon the certain Knowledg and ample Discovery of all things by the means of the Interpreters we carried with us. 'Tis from them I have the Account I am now going to give of that Mine from whence the Natives have those Golden Pendants for their Ears and Noses which we saw. Over against this great Village

lage a little higher on the North-side, there enters into the *Amazone* a River call'd *Turupaci*; going up this River you arrive at a place where you are to go ashore, to cross the Country for three days Journey, at the end of which you meet another River call'd *Tupara*, by sailing on which you meet with the River *Tquiari*, which is that the Portuguese call the Golden River; it springs from the foot of a Mountain hard by: Here the Natives amass Gold together in prodigious quantities; they find it all in Spangles, or Grains of a good alloy; they beat these small Grains of Gold together till they form those little Plates which they hang at their Ears and Noses, as we have said before. The People of this Country that find this Gold, trade with it among their Neighbours, who are call'd the *Maragus*; as for the other they are call'd the *Yuma Guaris*, which is as much as to say, the Metal-gatherers; for *Yuma* signifies Metal, and *Guaris* those that gather it up: and under this general Name of *Yuma* they understand all sorts of Metals, therefore they call'd all the Iron Tools that we had, as Axes, Hatchets, Bills, and Knives, by the same Name of *Yuma*. The way of getting to this place seem'd to me to be very troublesome and difficult, because of changing the Rivers so many times, and of making so long a Journey across the Country; which  
giving



giving me no satisfaction, I could not be at rest till I had discover'd an Advantage more easily attainable, of which I shall discourse hereafter.

---

C H A P. LVIII.

*The Affectation of this People to have great Holes made in their Ears and Nostrils, at which they hang their Plates of Gold.*

**T**Hese Savages go all naked both Men and Women, and their Riches only serve 'em for a small Ornament with which they deck their Ears and Noses; for they put the Gold they get out of the Mines to no other use than that of adorning themselves: they all generally have their Ears bored for this end, and they affect to have the Holes made so vastly wide, that one may almost thrust ones Fift through the Hole in the tips of some of their Ears; this is the place at which they hang their Jewels, and they commonly wear in them a handful of Leaves made up close together, to keep their Ears constantly in the same Figure. This passes among 'em for the greatest piece of Finery in the World. On the other side of the *Amazon*, over against this high Country which the *Curazicaris* possess, there is a flat Country all intersected with Rivers (and particularly

K 3

larly

larly with feveral Arms of the River *Caqueta*) which run along through it: fo that this Country is all made up of Iflands inclos'd by great Lakes, that extend feveral Leagues in length, till at laft all thefe Waters crowd together, and pour themfelves into the *Rionegro*, and fo fall into the *Amazone*. All thefe Iflands are peopled with many different Nations, but thofe that poffefs the moft Land are the *Zuavas*.

## C H A P. LIX.

*Of the River Yupara, and the fhort Cut it makes to the Golden Mountain.*

**F**ourteen Leagues below the Village which the Portuguez call the Golden Town, on the North-fide, we faw the mouth of the River *Yupara*, which is that by which one may enter into the Golden River; and this is the moft direct, the moft fure, and fhorteft way to come at that Golden Mountain that is fo vaftly rich. This Mouth is at the Latitude of two degrees and a half, and fo is that Village which is fitate four Leagues lower on the South-fide on the Edg of a great Precipice, at the foot of which is the Mouth of another great and fine River, which the Natives call *Tapi*, the Banks of which are inhabited by a great number of  
Indians

Indians call'd the *Paguavos*. I have already said that the Nation of the *Curazicaris* takes up above four and twenty Leagues of the Length of this Country; and I add, that all their Lands are very high Ground, where you may see very pleasant Fields and fine Pastures for Cattel; there are also Groves of Trees that extend a great length, and a great many Lakes that abound with Fish; which would be a great advantage to any that should make Plantations in those parts.

---

CHAP. LX.

*An Account of many other Nations, and of divers Rivers that descend into the Amazone; and of the Golden Lake that is so famous in Peru.*

**T**WENTY six Leagues below *Tapi* the River *Catua* falls into the *Amazone*, at the Mouth of it it forms a great Lake of Water, that looks green; it has its Source far up in the Country on the South-side, and its Banks, as well as those of other Rivers, are peopled with Indians: Yet 'tis said, another River, that comes on the North-side, and falls into the *Amazone* six Leagues below *Tapi*, and is called *Agaranatuba*, far exceeds all the other Rivers for the multitude of different Nations that inhabit its Banks. One

may also have Communication with the River *Tupara*, of which we have spoken above, by the way of this River. The People it maintains are called the *Tacarets*, &c. All these Nations speak two different Languages, and 'tis in their Country (if what is talked in the new Kingdom of *Granada* be true) that this so much desired Golden Lake is to be found \*, which has so long made the Inhabitants of *Peru* very uneasy. I don't affirm this as a Certainty: It may be it will please God one day to put this Matter out of doubt. There is another River that enters into the *Amazone* sixteen Leagues lower than *Araganatuba*, and bears the same Name; but  
it

\* He means the Lake of *Parima*, which all Geographers place under the Equinoctial Line in *Guiana*, and upon the Banks of which is that pretended City of *Manoa del Dorado*, which the Peruvians built when they fled thither to save themselves from the Cruelty and Tyranny of the Spaniards, according to the opinion of many of their Authors; which has often engag'd that Nation in very expensive Attempts: but the Hopes of finding this rich Countrey have still liv'd of success. The Essay that Sir *Walter Raleigh* made to this purpose, and which he was so eagerly set upon, was no less unhappy; for it cost him his Son's Life, who was killed by the Spaniards in this Expedition, as well as his own Head, which was taken off at *London* by King *James* soon after his Return from *America*. And indeed this *Manoa del Dorado* may be called the Philosophers Stone, or rather the Spaniards Chimera, in search of which they have employ'd immense Sums to no purpose, at several Times, and under several Commanders, and must needs have lost a great number of Men in above sixty different Expeditions or Attempts which they have made.

it is to be observ'd that these two are indeed one and the same River divided into two different Arms, and therefore both bear the same Name, till they empty themselves into the *Amazone*. Two and twenty Leagues below this last Arm of *Araganatuba*, are the utmost Limits of this great and rich Nation of the *Curazicaris*, who inhabit one of the best Cantons of Land we have met with in all the Extent of this great River.

---

CHAP. LXI.

*Of the warlike People called Yorimaus.*

TWO Leagues lower begins the Country of the most renown'd and warlike Nation of any all along the River of *Amazons*; these People made all the Portuguese Fleet tremble when they went to land in their Countrey, as they came up from *Para*. They are call'd the *Yorimaus*, they dwell on the South-side of the River, and not only possess all the Continent along its Banks for above sixty Leagues successively, but likewise the greatest part of all those Islands the *Amazone* makes in that long space: for tho' the Extent of Land this People possess is confin'd within the Space of a little above sixty Leagues on the River *Amazone*, yet having all the Islands besides within the  
same

same space, and all the Continent a good way up in the Countrey, they are as numerous as any Nation we saw wherever we set foot to land all along the River. The greatest part of the *Yorimaus* are well made, and of a better Shape than the rest of the Indians; they go naked as well as others, but one may well see by the Air of their Countenances, that they have a greater dependance upon their Courage than the other Savages: they came amongst us, and went from us with the greatest Assurance that could be; and there pass'd no day, but above 200 Canoos full of Women and Children came aboard our Admiral, bringing with them all sorts of Fruits, Fishes, Meal and other things, which we bought of 'em in exchange for Glasse-Buttons, Needles and Knives. This was at the first Village of the *Yorimaus*, which is built at the Mouth of a fine River, that seem'd to us to be very impetuous, by the great Force with which it repuls'd the Waters of the *Amazone*, as it ran into it. I don't doubt but the Banks of it are inhabited, as well as those of all the others, by many different Nations; but we could not learn the Names of 'em, because our Fleet only pass'd by the Mouth of it.

## C H A P. LXII.

*The Length of the Country which these People possess, and the great Islands they inhabit in the River of Amazons.*

TWO and twenty Leagues below this first Plantation of the *Yorimaus*, we met with the greatest Village we had yet seen on this great River: The Houses joined to one another, and continued so to do above a League in length: each of these Houses contains not only one Family, as is customary in most Cities in *Europe*, but in those that were least filld there dwelt 4 or 5 entire Families, and more in the greatest part of 'em. By this may be conjectur'd what an incredible multitude of people must needs live in that one Town. We went to their Houses, and found all there in profound Peace. They waited for our coming, without being at all alarm'd by it, and furnished us with all necessary Provisions, which our Fleet began now to want. We continued five days in this Place, and stor'd our selves here with a Provision of above five hundred Measures of Meal of \* *Magnioc*; so that we had more than enough

\* This Meal of *Magnioc* the Author speaks of, is bak'd and eaten instead of Bread or *Cassave*, as well in this Country he speaks of, as on almost all the Coasts of *Brazil*, where

nough of it to accomplish our Voyage, which as we continued from thence, we perpetually met with the Villages of this Nation one soon after another; at last we arriv'd at a place thirty Leagues below this great Town, which in all appearance is the chief Strength of this Nation. 'Tis a great Island made by one Arm of the *Amazon*, as it goes to join it self to another River that comes to fall into it; and both together run against the Banks of this last River, which are inhabited by so great a Multitude of people, that 'tis not without reason that their Neighbours fear and respect 'em, if it were only for their Numbers.

## C H A P.

where the Captains of Ships store themselves with it, when they are in want of Bisquet. This kind of Meal will not only keep good oftentimes as far as *Portugal*, but will sometimes serve again in other Voyages, when they are over-stock'd with it. It has this Property with it, that 'tis more fit for long Voyages than *Cassave*, because it keeps better. 'Tis true it becomes very insipid at last, and so would the best Bread we make, if kept as long. And 'tis further to be noted, that this bak'd Meal can't be made into Bread, and that the Indians bake it in great Earthen Basons over the Fire almost as Confectioners do their Sweat-meats; after which they dry it yet more in the Sun, when 'tis prepar'd for long Voyages. When you are past the River of *Amazons*, the Indians on the other side of the Line know neither how to make it, nor the use of it; they only make *Cassave*, which is Bread made of this same Meal of *Magnioc* before it is bak'd: There is also a particular way of preparing that to make it keep well for long Voyages, but not so well as this bak'd Meal.



## C H A P. LXIII.

*The Extent of the Province of the Yorimaus, and of the River of Cuchiguara. Of a People so ingenious in working of Wood, that they equal the best Masters in Europe.*

TEN Leagues below this Island the Province of the *Yorimaus* ends; and two Leagues farther we found on the South-side the Mouth of a famous River which the Indians call *Cuchiguara*; 'tis navigable, tho there are Rocks in it in some Places, and 'tis very full of Fish, and well stock'd with Tortoises; its Banks are loaded with *Maze* and *Magnioc*. In a word, it has every thing necessary to make the Navigation of it easy and agreeable. All the Banks of this River are peopled with different Nations, which I shall name one after another successively, beginning with those that dwell at the Mouth of it, going on with those that dwell along the River upward, which are the *Cuchiguaras*, and bear the same Name with the River *Cuchiguara*, &c. and in fine, all the last are call'd the *Curiguiris*; who, according to the Report that Persons who have been with them, and offer'd to conduct us to them, gave us, are Giants of sixteen Spans height, and very stout; they go naked as well as the others, and wear great Plates of Gold at their  
Ears

Ears and Nostrils: We were informed that 'twould be a Journey of two Months to go into the Province of these Giants from the Mouth of this River. When we had passed some space farther, we found on the South-side the People call'd the *Caupunas* and the *Zurinas*, which are the most ingenious and curious handy-craft Men that we saw in all the Country. Without any other Tools than such as I have spoken of before, they make Chairs in the Form of Beasts, with so much Curiosity, and so commodious for a Man to sit at his Ease, that I think the Invention of Man cannot contrive better. They make *Estolicas*, which are their ordinary Weapons, of a very slender Stick, with so much Art, that 'tis not to be wondred at that other Nations in the Country are very desirous of them; and which is very strange, they'll cut a rais'd Figure so much to the Life, and so exactly upon any coarse Piece of Wood, that many of our Carvers might take Pattern by them. 'Tis not only to gratify their own Fancies, and for their own Use, that they make these Pieces of Work, but also for the Profit it brings them; for they hereby maintain a Trade with their Neighbours, and truck their Work with them for any Necessaries to serve their Occasions.

C H A P. LXIV.

*Of the River Bafurara, and the great Islands it forms: Of the People that inhabit those Parts: Of their Arms, and the Commerce they have with the Dutch that inhabit Cayenne.*

**T**Hirty two Leagues below the Mouth of *Cuchiguara* we met the Mouth of another River on the North-side, call'd *Bafurara* by the Natives: This River extends it self a great way up in the Country, and forms several great Lakes, so that the Country is divided into divers large Islands, which are all peopled with an infinite Number of Inhabitants. These Lands lie very high, and are never overflow'd by the Inundations, let them be never so great. This Country abounds with all sorts of Provision, as *Maze*, *Magnioc*, all kinds of Fruit, Venison, Wild-Fowl; and Fish, and yields its Inhabitants a liberal Maintenance; which makes it abound as much in Men as in all other things. All the People that live in the large Extent of this Country are call'd by the general Name of *Carabuyavas*, and are divided into particular Provinces, some of which are call'd the *Ceraguanas*, &c. All the Indians use Bows and Arrows; and among some of them I saw Iron Tools and Weapons, as  
Hatchets,

Hatchets, Halbards, Bills and Knives. I asked them, by our Interpreters, from whence they had those Instruments of Iron: they answered, that they bought them of the People of that Country that dwelt nearest the Sea on that side, who had their Goods in exchange for 'em; that they were white Men like us, and made use of the same Arms, as Swords and Guns, and had Houses upon the Sea-Coast; that the only difference between them and us was, that they had all light-colour'd Hair. These Tokens were sufficient to assure us that these were the Dutch that were in possession of the Mouth of the Smooth River, or the River *Philippe*, some time before. It was in the Year 1638, that they made a Descent into *Guiana*, which depends on the Government of the New Kingdom of *Granada*, and not only made themselves Masters of the whole Island, \* but came upon it by such a Surprize, that the

\* The *Guiana* is a considerable part of the Continent, and not one of the Islands of the Ocean, as our Author seems to signify in this place; yet it may well enough be said, that he spake more truly than he thought, and that the River *Orenoque*, or *Paria*, parting from the River of *Amazons*, to come afterwards to discharge it self into the Sea over against the Island of *La Trinidad*, betwixt the ninth and tenth Degrees of Northern Latitude; it may very well be, I say, that *Guiana* by these means becomes an Island, comprehending all that Extent of Land between the Mouth of *Orenoque* and that of the *Amazon*, quite to the place where these two great Rivers divide

the Spaniards had not time to carry away the Holy Sacrament of the Altar, but left it in Captivity in the Enemies hand: They promised themselves a great Ransom from us to get this holy Pledg out of their hands, knowing what Respect and Love the Catholics have for the precious Body of their Saviour; but our Men took another Course, which was, to betake themselves to their Arms, and compose good Companies of Souldiers who were resolved to go with the Courage of Christians to expose their Lives to deliver their Saviour from the hands of his Enemies. They were big with these just and pious Resolutions, which could only be inspired from Heaven, when we parted from thence to return into *Spain*, to render an Account of our Voyage.

to take their Course asunder, till they fall into the Sea at above 300 Leagues distance one from another. All this Interval is what Geographers commonly call in their Maps the Coast of *Guiana*. In this place the Island of *Cayenne* is situate, which is so famous either for the divers Adventures which the French Colonies have had at several times in establishing themselves there, or for the divers Battels they have had as well with the Indians as the Europeans, to maintain their Ground there, in which they have succeeded so well, that 'tis now one of the most considerable and advantageous Colonies they have in all *America*.

## C H A P. LXV.

Of the great River called Rionegro, [or the Black River] because its Waters are so clear, that they look black again: and of a fit Place to fortify upon this River, which would be a means to obtain the Sovereignty of the Amazone by the way to it from the North-Cape through the River call'd Rio-grande.

ON the same North-side, thirty Leagues or something less from *Basurara*, we met with the largest Mouth, and the finest River of any that come to throw themselves into the *Amazone*. It runs a Course of 1300 Leagues in length; the Mouth of it is a League and a half wide, which is at the Latitude of four degrees; and to speak a little pleasantly, one may say, this mighty River is so haughty, that 'tis offended to meet with a greater than it self; and as the incomparable *Amazone* stretches out its Arms to receive it, this proud River disdains to be so embrac'd as to lose it self in the other's Waters, and therefore keeps separated from it, and fills up half the Bed of the *Amazone* it self for above the length of twelve Leagues, so that the Waters of the one may be easily distinguished from the other by those that sail in this Channel. The Portuguez had  
some

some Reason to call this the *Black River*, because at its Mouth, and many Leagues above, its Depth, together with the Clearness of those Waters which are pour'd into its Channel from several great Lakes, make it appear black, as if it were dyed, tho when it is put in a Glass it looks as clear as Crystal. It takes its Course from West to East at its beginning, but has such great Windings, that in a very little space it changes its Course to different Points; but the Course it runs for several Leagues before it empties it self into the *Amazone*, is again from West to East. The Indians that live upon the Banks of it call it *Curiguarura*; but the *Toupinambous*, of whom we shall speak presently, give it the name of *Urama*, which signifies [*Black Water*] in their Language. They also give another name to the *Amazone*, which it retains in those Parts, namely, *Pajanaquis*, which is as much as to say [*the Great River*], to distinguish it from another, which tho it be a great River, however is much less than this, and named *Pajanamira*, which enters into the *Amazone* on the South-side, a League below the *Black River*. We were assur'd that this River was inhabited by a great number of People of different Nations, the last of which wear Clothes and Hats like ours, which sufficiently convinc'd us that these People were not remote from our Ci-

ties in *Peru*. Those that dwell on the Banks of the Black River, possess a great deal of Ground; they are call'd *Canicuaris* and *Curupatabas*; and the last Nation is that of the *Quaravaquazanas*, that dwell upon one Arm of the Black River: and 'tis by this Arm, as we were sufficiently inform'd, that one may pass into the *Riogrande*, the Mouth of which goes into the Sea at the North-Cape, near which River the Dutch have established themselves.

All these Nations make use of Bows and Arrows, the most of which they poison with the Juice of Herbs. All the Lands upon this Black River are situate very high, the Soil is very good, and if manur'd, would yield plenty of all sorts of Fruit (even such as we have in *Europe*) in some places that lie well to produce'em. There are a great many fine and pleasant Fields all cover'd with excellent Pasturage sufficient to nourish an innumerable stock of all sorts of Cattle. There are likewise abundance of good Trees, the Timber of which is very good for all sorts of Carpenters Work, whether for Land or Water: And besides this great plenty of Wood, the Country yields very good Stones, and that in vast Quantities, fit for the noblest Buildings. The Borders of it are stor'd with all sorts of Game. Indeed it has but a few Fish in comparison with the River of *Amazons*;



zons; the reason of which is from the exceeding Clearness of the Water: But to make amends for this Defect, the Lakes which are in the Country, and pour their Waters into this River, yield the Inhabitants more Fish than they need. This River has at the Mouth of it the best Situation in the World for the making of a Fort, and plenty of Stones to build it, which would be very proper to hinder our Enemies from coming by this River to enter into the great Channel of the *Amazone*; not that I think this to be the best place of all for a Fortification for such a purpose, but rather several Leagues above this Mouth, in an Arm that goes to cast it self into the River call'd *Riogrande*, whose Mouth (as I have already said) is in the North Sea: there we might place all our Forces with the greatest Certainty of entirely stopping the Passage of our Enemies into this new World, which they so passionately desire to discover; and which they will some time or other attempt, if they are not prevented by securing this Passage. I dare not affirm that this River call'd the *Riogrande*, into which the Arm of the Black River enters, is the Smooth River, or the *Philippe*, for both enter into the Sea toward the North Cape; but by all the Observations I have made, I am very inclinable to believe that it is the River *Philippe*,

because 'tis the first considerable River that enters into the Sea beyond the Cape. But this I know for certain, that the *Riogrande* is not the River *Orenoque*, because the principal Mouth of it into the Sea is over against the Island of *La Trinidad*, which is above a hundred Leagues below the Place where the *Philippe* empties it self into the Sea. It was by this River that the Tyrant *Lopez Daguirre* pass'd into the North Sea; and seeing he made this Voyage very well, some body else may as well succeed in the same Attempt, and follow the Course which another has steer'd before him.

---

 C H A P. LXVI.

*A Mutiny happens in the Portuguez Fleet, when they see themselves so near home without having got any Treasure: they take up a Resolution to go and pillage the People upon the Black River, and to get Slaves, but are prevented by Father D' Acugna.*

OUR Fleet lay still at Anchor in the Mouth of the Black River on the 12th day of October, in the Year 1639; when the Portuguez Souldiers calling to mind that they were now almost as good as at home, and had got nothing these two Years since they went out, began to look upon the end

of

of their Voyage as the greatest Misfortune that could befall them, and to tell one another, that since they had reap'd no other Advantage by all the Labour and Hardship they had pass'd through but the loss of two long Years, and the Increase of their Miseries, they ought to consider what they had to do while opportunity offer'd it self; and that it would be a ridiculous thing to expect of his Catholick Majesty the Reward of those Services they had render'd him in the Discovery of so many Countries, seeing a great many others before them, who had been prodigal of their Blood, and hazarded their Lives for the Advancement of the Grandeur of *Spain*, had for all that died upon a Dunghil, not knowing to whom to apply themselves for the Relief of their Necessities. These seditious Words being received with Applause by the greatest part of the Portuguese, they immediately resolv'd to speak their Minds to their General, and to engage him one way or other to fall in with their Designs.

No sooner had they taken up this Resolution, but they address'd themselves to him, telling him, it was needless for them to represent to him the miserable Condition they were in, since he knew it as well as themselves; that they had now been for two Years roving up and down upon these Ri-

vers, where they were every day in danger of perishing, either by Hunger or excessive Labour, or by the Arrows of the Savages; and therefore begg'd him to compassionate their Necessity, and not to take it amiss that they sought some Relief; that they were sure that only along the Black River they could get as many of those Slaves which the Indians had taken in War, as would turn to a considerable account to them; and tho they should bring nothing home from their Voyage but these Slaves, they hop'd they should not be ill receiv'd by their Friends at *Para*, but that if they should return home empty-handed, and should bring no Slaves with them after they had pass'd through so many populous Provinces, the Inhabitants of which durst come to their very Doors to make Slaves of them, they should be reckon'd the most cowardly and infamous Wretches in the World.

The General considering he was but one against a great many, and perceiving a Mutiny was already form'd in the Minds of the Souldiers, thought it not his best way to irritate them any more, but gave 'em permission to put this Enterprize in execution, seeing the Wind favour'd their Entrance into the Black River, and seem'd to invite 'em to this Project. The Portuguez were transported with Joy that they had obtain'd this Leave,  
and

and there was not one amongst 'em but promis'd himself at least 300 Slaves for his share. This Resolution gave me no small Uneasiness, for I did not well know what were the General's true Sentiments of this Attempt; but I soon found both that he had Courage and a great deal of Generosity, and that he was a mortal Enemy of such Violences as the Souldiers were going to commit; for my part, by the Grace of God, I thought myself strong enough not to need fear any thing, and therefore made a firm Resolution with myself, rather to die a thousand times if it were possible, than consent to any thing that would be against the Glory of God, or against the Service of his Catholick Majesty. At the same time I went to celebrate the holy Mass, and after I had done, I retir'd with my Comrade, that we might consult together by what means to hinder so barbarous and diabolical Resolution; and we agreed to make an open Protestation against their Rashness and Disobedience.

## C H A P. LXVII.

*The Order given to the Fleet to set sail, which was done without noise. And of the River of Wood or Cayary, and the divers Nations that inhabit its Banks, from whence there is a short cut to the Mountain Potosi.*

**I** Communicated our Resolution to the General, who was very glad to find me of his Mind, but confess'd nothing could be more bold than my Protestation. However, he gave signal Proof of the greatness of his Courage on this occasion; for he caus'd the Paper containing my Protestation to be publish'd through the Fleet, at the same time commanding the Sea-men to furl the Sails, and to put all things in readiness to pass out of the Black River the next day, and to return into the *Amazon* to finish our Voyage. This Order was put in execution, for we went back the day following; and continuing our Course 40 Leagues lower on the South-side, we found the great River of *Wood*, which is a Name the Portuguez gave it when they came from *Para*, because of the vast quantity of pieces of Timber this River carried down with it: But the proper Name of it among the Indians that dwell near it is *Cayari*; it comes (as I have said) from the South-side, and, as we were told, is form'd of two great Rivers, which

which meet together some Leagues above the Mouth of it. And in all probability, seeing it was by this River that the *Toupinambous* came down into this Country, one may venture to affirm, that there is no shorter and surer way to come at the Province of *Potosi*, than by the way of this River. There are many Nations inhabiting the shores of it; the first on the side of the Mouth of it are the *Zurinas*, and the *Cayanas*, and above them are the *Urarchaus*, the *Anamaris*, the *Guarinumas*, the *Curanaris*, the *Pepunacas*, and the *Abacaris*. From the Mouth of this River as you go down the *Amazone* you meet with the *Zapucayas*, and the *Wbaringas*, who are excellent Workmen in Wood: below them are the *Guaranaquacos*, the *Maraguas*, the *Guimajis*, the *Burais*, the *Punovis*, the *Orequaras*, the *Aperas*, and other Nations, of whose Names I can give no certain account.

---

C H A P. LXVIII.

*Of the Island of the Toupinambous, who came out of Brazil when it was conquer'd by the Portuguez, and made themselves Masters of this Island.*

**T**Wenty eight Leagues below the River *Cayari*, as we continued our Course on the *Amazone* on the South-side, we arriv'd at

ã great Island 60 Leagues in breadth, and consequently above 200 Leagues in compass. This whole Island is peopled with the valiant *Toupinambous*, who when *Brazil* was conquer'd, voluntarily exil'd themselves from their Country, choosing rather to quit all the Province of *Fernambuco* than to lose their Liberty, and to submit themselves to the severe Government of the Portuguez: They left above 84 great Villages where they had planted themselves, and came away so universally, that there was not one living Soul left in all their Houses. They took their way on the left-hand of those great Mountains call'd *Cordeliers*, which begin at the Strait of *Magellan*, and cross through all Southern *America*, from North to South. They pass'd all the Rivulets and Rivers that descend from those Mountains to discharge themselves into the Ocean. Some of 'em came as far as *Peru*, and dwelt with the Spaniards towards the Source of the River *Cayari*: they continued with 'em some time; but a Spaniard having caus'd one of 'em to be whipp'd for killing a Cow, they could not put up this Injury, but resolv'd all to be gone; and making use of the Advantage of the River, they all embark'd in their Canoos and went down it as far as this great Island, where they now dwell. They speak the general Language of *Brazil*, which extends through



through all the Country that the Portuguez have conquer'd as far as *Maragnon* and *Para*: They told us, that when their Fathers left *Brazil*, not knowing how to get Sufenance all together in the Defarts through which they were to pafs, they were constrain'd during a March of above 900 Leagues to separate by reason of their multitude, fo that some went one way, and some another; and by this means all the Mountains of *Peru* call'd the *Cordeliers* are peopled with the *Toupinambous*. This is a very brave and valiant Nation of Indians, as they made themselves appear to be to the People whom they found in this Island, where they are at present establisht. For in all appearance these *Toupinambous* were very few in comparison of the Inhabitants of this Island when they arriv'd there, yet 'tis certain they fo often beat, and fo entirely subdued all those they fought with, that after they had destroy'd whole Nations, they forc'd the rest to leave their Native Country in fear, and to go and plant themselves in very distant Regions. These Warlike Savages use Bows and Arrows with great dexterity, and have fo noble a Courage, and Greatness of Mind, that in these Qualities they seem not to come behind the most accomplish'd Nations in *Europe*. But tho almost all of 'em are but the Children or Grandchildren of those that came from *Brazil* into  
this

this Island, yet it is to be observ'd that they begin to degenerate from their Ancestors, by the Alliances they contract with those of this Country, and by their accustoming themselves to the manner of living us'd by the original Inhabitants. They all receiv'd us with Demonstrations of extraordinary Joy; and let us know, that they thought to resolve in a little time to enter into a Treaty with us, and to put themselves in the number of the Allies and Friends of the People of *Para*. This Declaration of theirs pleas'd me very much, and made me hope that no small Advantages would accrue to our Nation by it: For if these valiant People once become of our Party, it must needs be an easy matter for us to bring all the other Nations of the River of *Amazons* to reasonable Terms, since there is none of 'em but tremble at the very Name of the *Toupinambous*.

---

CHAP. LXIX.

*Of the Ingenuity of the Toupinambous; of their Language; and the Account we received of the Salt-Pits in Peru.*

**T**Hese *Toupinambous* are a very ingenious and intelligent People; and having no need of Interpreters to treat with them, because

because (as I have said) they speak the general Language of *Brazil*, which many of our Portuguez, that have been born and bred there, speak as well as they, we had the Advantage of a very particular Account of divers things, which I am going to relate, and which may be believed on their Report, because they are a People that have rovd abroad, and subjected all the neighbouring Countries to their Power. They told us, that on the South-side near their Island there are two Nations among others upon the Continent that are very remarkable; one of 'em are Dwarfs as small as little Children, and are called *Guayazis*, the other is a Race of People that come into the World with their Feet turn'd behind 'em, so that those that are unacquainted with their monstrous Shape, and should follow their Track, would run from 'em instead of overtaking 'em; they are called *Matayus*, and are tributary to the *Toupinambous*, whom they are obliged to furnish with Hatchets made of Stone to fell great Trees with, when they have a mind to clear a Piece of Ground; for they frame these Hatchets very neatly, and 'tis their whole business to make of 'em. They told us moreover, that on the other side of the River, that is Northward, there are seven Provinces adjoining one to another, which are very populous; but because they are a People

ple but of mean Courage and Strength, and only feed upon Fruits and some small wild Animals, without ever fighting one with another when they are angry, or ever taking up Arms to defend themselves from other Nations, they are of no account in the Country. They further told us, that themselves had been a long time at Peace with another Nation, whose Confines extend to those we have just spoken of, and had a regular Trade with 'em for all Commodities, wherewith either Countrey abounded; and that the principal thing they had from this People was Salt, for which they gave 'em other things in exchange; and that this Salt came from a Place not far distant from 'em. If this be true, these Salt-pits would be of great advantage to the Spaniards, and would serve 'em not only for those parts of the Countrey that are conquer'd, but also for the more commodious establishing of Colonies on the Banks of this great River. But if there should be nothing in this Story on this side, it is not to be doubted but Salt is to be found in great abundance along those Rivers that come down on the side of *Peru*; because in the Year 1631, when I was in the City of *Lima*, two Men went from thence at two different times to seek some, and came back with as much as they could carry: they told us they came to a certain Place, where they  
went

went on one of the Rivers (in all appearance one of those lesser Rivers that form that great one, which falls into the *Amazone*) and arrived at a Mountain all of Salt, of which the Inhabitants made great advantage, being become very rich by the Traffick they had in exchange for it from those Indians that came a great way to buy it; not that it is any strange thing in *Peru*, and in all the Mountains, to see Rocks of Salt-stones, the Salt of which is very good; for no other is made use of in all that Countrey: 'Tis got out of the Rock with Iron Instruments in great pieces, each of which weigh 5 or 6 \* *Arobas*. This Province of the *Toupinambous* is sixty six Leagues in length, and ends with a great Town situated at the Latitude of 3 Degrees, as is also the first Town of the Indian *Aguas*, of which we have spoken before.

\* The *Aroba* is a Weight of 25 Pounds, as the *Quintal* is of a 100 Pounds.

---

CHAP. LXX.

*Of the Amazons, an Account of their Manners and Customs.*

THESE *Toupinambous* likewise confirm'd the Report which is spread throughout this great River of the Renown'd *Amazons*, from whence it borrows its true Name,  
M by

by which it has been known from the very first Discovery of it to this day, not only by those who have navigated it, but also by all Cosmographers who have given any good account of it. It would be very strange if the Name of *Amazone* should have been impos'd on this River without any reasonable Ground; and that tho it well deserves a Name that might render it famous, it should only be known by a fabulous one: This does not seem at all probable that such a River as this, that possesses so many Advantages above all others, should have deriv'd its Glory from a Title that does not belong to it; like what we see in some Men, who when they have not Vertue enough to obtain the Glory they desire by their own Merit, are so mean spirited and disingenuous to deck themselves with the advantageous Qualities of others: But the Proofs that give assurance that there is a Province of *Amazons* on the Banks of this River, are so strong and convincing, that it would be a renouncing of moral Certainty to scruple the giving credit to it. I don't build upon the solemn Examinations made by the Authority of the Sovereign Court of *Quito*, in which many Witnesses have been heard that have been born in those Parts, and liv'd there a long time; and of all things contain'd in their Frontier Countries, one of the principal which is particularly affirm'd  
by

by 'em is, that one of those Provinces near our River is peopled with a sort of warlike Women, who live together, and maintain their Government alone, without the Company of Men; that at a certain Season of the Year they seek the Society of Men in order to perpetuate their Race; but at all other times live together in their Towns, and employ themselves in manuring the Ground, from which with hard Labour they procure all Necessaries for the Support and Comfort of Life. Nor will I insist on other Informations that have been made in the new Kingdom of *Granada*, at the Royal Seat of the City of *Pasto*, where several Indians were examined, and particularly one Indian Woman, who affirm'd that she had been in the very Countrey which these valiant Women inhabit, and whose Account was in every respect conformable to what had been before asserted in the foregoing Relations: but I can't conceal what I have heard with my own Ears, and the Truth of which I have been enquiring after from my first embarking on the *Amazone*; and I must say I have been inform'd at all the Indian Towns where I have been, that there are such Women in the Countrey as I have above described; and every one that gave me an account of 'em did it by Characters so exactly agreeing with the rest, that if there be no-

M 2

thing

thing in it, it must needs be said that the greatest Lie in the World passes throughout all *America* for one of the most certain Historical Truths. However we had the clearest Information of the Province where these Women dwell, of their singular Customs, of the Indians that correspond with them, of the Ways into their Country, and of those Indians with whom they converse to prevent the Extinction of their Race in the last Village, which makes the Frontier Town between them and the *Toupinambous*.

---

CHAP. LXXI.

*The best Account of the Amazons of America,*

**T**Hirty six Leagues below this utmost Village of the *Toupinambous*, as you go down our Great River, you meet with another on the North-side, which comes from the very Province of the *Amazons*, and is known among the People of the Country by the Name of *Cunuris*. This River bears the Name of those Indians that dwell nearest to the Mouth of it: Above these first People higher up the River *Cunuris* you meet with other Indians call'd *Apotos*, that speak the general Language of *Brazil*; higher still you find the *Tagaris*, and lastly the *Guacaras*, who are the People that have the



the Privilege to converse with these valiant Women, and enjoy their Favours. They dwell upon huge Mountains, that are prodigiously high, among which there is one that lifts its Head a great Height above all the rest, which is so buffered with Winds, that it is quite barren, and looks very bare; the Name of it is *Tacamiaba*. These Women (as has been said) are very couragious, and have always maintain'd themselves alone without the help and assistance of Men; and when their Neighbours come into their Countrey at a time concerted with them, they receive 'em with their Weapons in their Hands, which are Bows and Arrows, and which they exercise as if they were going against their Enemies; but knowing well that the others don't come to fight, but are their Friends, they lay down their Arms, and all run into the Canoos or other little Vessels of these Indians, and each *Amazon* takes the Hammock (a Cotton Bed they hang up to sleep in) which she finds next at hand; this she carries home, and hangs up in a Place, where the Owner of it may know it again when he comes; after which she receives him as her Guest, and treats him those few days they continue together. These Indians afterward return to their own Dwellings, and never fail to make this Voyage every Year at the appointed time. The

Girls which they bear are brought up by their Mothers, and instructed in the use of Arms, as well as inur'd to Labour, as if they were ambitious to advance the wonted Valour of their Predecessors still to a greater Height. As for the Male-Children, 'tis not certain what they do with 'em: I saw an Indian who told me, that when he was a Child he was with his Father at such an Interview, and assured me, that they gave the Male Children to their Fathers the next time they came after their Birth. But the common Report is, that they kill all their Males as soon as they are born: and this is generally suppos'd to be the truest Account. Time will discover the Truth of this Matter. 'Tis certain they have Treasures in their Country, enough to enrich the whole World: The Mouth of this River, upon the Banks of which the *Amazons* dwell, is at the Latitude of two Degrees and a half.

---

CHAP. LXXII.

*Of the River Vexamina, and the Strait of the Amazone, where it is but a quarter of a League in breadth.*

**A**fter having cross'd the Mouth of the true River of *Amazons*, we came down 24 Leagues more upon our great River

ver, and on the same North-side found another small River call'd *Vexamina*, which enters into the *Amazone* just at the place wher, this great and spacious River grows narrow and is so shut up by the Land, that it contracts it self into the space of a little more than a quarter of a League. The Situation is extremely favourable for the building of two Forts on the two Banks of our incomparable River, which would not only obstruct the Passage of an Enemy that should come up this River from the Sea, but would also serve for Custom-houses for the Entry of every thing that should be carried down from *Peru* this way, if this River should ever be inhabited and stock'd with the People of our Nation. Tho this Strait is at 360 Leagues distance from the Sea, yet the flowing and ebbing of Tides are perceiv'd here; for the River is seen to increase and diminish every day, altho not so sensibly as some Leagues below.

---

## C H A P. LXXIII.

*The River of the Tapajotos; their Courage, their poison'd Arrows, and the manner of their treating the Portuguez Fleet.*

**F**OUR Leagues below this Strait, on the South-side, is the Mouth of the great and noble River of the *Tapajotos*, which borrows its Name from that of the Inhabitants of the Province which it waters. This Country is well stock'd with Indians; the Land of it is very good, and abounds with all sorts of Provision: These *Tapajotos* are a courageous People, and are dreaded by all the Nations that dwell near 'em, because they inveniome their Arrows with so subtile a Poison, that they kill those they wound, there being no Remedy found powerful enough to resist their Venom. This was the only Reason why the Portuguez themselves were so long their Neighbours without having any Commerce or Alliance with them, tho they were very desirous of obtaining their Friendship; but when they would have obliged 'em to quit their Country, and to come and inhabit the Places which the Portuguez had conquer'd, the *Tapajotos* would never give their Consent to it, because nothing in the World touches 'em more sensibly, than to talk to

'em of leaving their native Country. Not but that they received our Men very kindly, and with a great deal of Joy, when they landed in their Country: We had large Experience of their Kindness when we lodged at one of their great Towns, which contain'd above 500 Families, where for a whole day they were continually coming to visit us, bringing us Hens, Ducks, Fish, Meal, Fruits, and all other things we wanted, with so much Freedom and Confidence in us, that the Women and Children did not care to go out of our sight: Nay they frankly told us, that if the Portuguez would let them alone to enjoy their own Houses, they should come if they pleas'd, with all their Hearts, to dwell amongst 'em; and that they would receive 'em, and serve 'em as their best Friends as long as they liv'd.

---

C H A P. LXXIV.

*The ill Treatment these People receiv'd from the Portuguez at this time.*

**A**LL the Civilities of the *Tapajotos* were not sufficient to touch the Minds of People that mind nothing but Self-interest, and the Gratification of their covetous Humour, such as those that go to conquer these Countries, proposing nothing to themselves  
in

in so long and difficult an Enterprize, but to get a great number of Slaves to sell, or truck for other Goods; who therefore had scarce Patience to hear the Proposals of these poor People, much less so much Justice as to treat 'em with Civility and Reason; but having got a Notion that these People had abundance of Slaves to wait on 'em, began to treat 'em as Rebels, to commit great Outrages upon 'em, and to menace 'em with a cruel War. All things were in this posture when we arrived at the Fort of the Portuguez call'd *Destierro*, that is [*the Fort of Banishment*] where their Troops were coming together to put in execution this barbarous Design. I not being able wholly to hinder it, however endeavour'd by the best Methods I could take, at least to suspend the execution of it for a little time, till I could give the Governour of *Para* advice of it. He that was to command in this Expedition was *Benoise Maziel*, the Governour of *Para*'s Son, who was constituted in the Office of Serjeant Major of the State. He gave me his Word that he would not advance to put his Enterprize in execution till he had received fresh Orders from his Father. But I had scarce left him before he embark'd as many Souldiers as he could in a Brigantine arm'd with Pieces of Canon, and in other less Vessels, with which he came suddenly upon 'em to surprize 'em.

These

These poor People immediately accepted Peace, with a thousand Testimonies of their good Affection to the Portuguez; and when they had submitted their Persons to their pleasure, *Maziel* commanded 'em to bring him all the poison'd Arrows they had, which was what they most fear'd: These poor Wretches presently obey'd, and they were no sooner disarm'd but the Portuguez made 'em all come together, and inclos'd 'em like Sheep in a Fold, securing 'em with a strong Guard; and immediately let loose a great many Indians of their own Company, whom they brought with 'em, who for doing of Mischiefs are like so many unchain'd Devils; and these in a very little time sack'd this whole Town, so that they spoil'd and broke every thing in it; they seiz'd all the Daughters and Wives of these miserable Creatures, and committed such abominable Violences before their Eyes, that one of the Company that gave me an account of this Action, protested to me, that he had rather never have any Slaves, than to procure 'em at this rate; and that he would sooner leave all those he had in possession, than see such Cruelties committed again.

## C H A P. LXXV.

*That such kind of Treatment makes these People hate the Europeans, and that they have as much Subtlety as Courage to defend themselves.*

**T**HE Inhumanity of the Portuguez did not stop here; for they having no other design than that of procuring Slaves, were not satisfied in having the Masters in possession: therefore they endeavour'd to affright these poor Indians, whom they kept under Guard, with terrible Menaces, and made 'em tremble at the thoughts of the new Cruelties they said they would exercise on 'em, if they would not give 'em Slaves; and on the other hand promis'd them, that if they would, they should not only have their full Liberty, but they would consider 'em as their best Friends; and besides, would give 'em as many Iron Tools and Cotton Clothes in exchange for 'em, as should fully satisfy 'em. What could these poor Creatures do more than abandon themselves to the Discretion of their Enemies? They saw they were in their hands, depriv'd of their Arms, their Houses plunder'd, their Wives and Daughters ravish'd. They therefore offer'd to procure 'em a thousand Slaves, and sent some of their



their Company to get 'em together ; but these poor Wretches were fled away to secure themselves while the Town was pillaging ; therefore they could not possibly get above two hundred : These they deliver'd to the Portuguez, and promising to procure all the rest for which they had engag'd, were set at liberty. In the Condition these poor Creatures were, they would have given their very Children for Slaves, to come to a Composition with their Enemies, as they have frequently done. The Portuguez put all these Slaves in a Vessel, and sent 'em to *Maragnon* and *Para*. This I assert as a thing I saw with my own Eyes : This Prey was very grateful to the *Portuguez* ; and their Success in this Expedition so encouraged 'em, and excited their Avarice, that they soon made preparation to go and seek a greater Booty of this kind in another Province more remote upon this great River. 'Tis not to be doubted but they exercis'd still greater Cruelties, because in these Expeditions there go very few that have any Honour or Conscience, who might be capable of assisting him that commands, to restrain the Souldiers Barbarities. These things must needs enrage all the Inhabitants of this River against the Name of the Portuguez. And I doubt not that when an Attempt shall be made to pacify the Com-motions, and allay the Hatred these Violences have

have caus'd among those People, it will be found a matter of that great difficulty that 'twill scarce ever be accomplish'd; whereas in the State we left these People upon the River when we pass'd by their Countries, nothing could have been more easy than to have made a General Peace with them. These are the Conquests of *Brazil* so much talk'd of, and this is the Traffick the Souldiers live upon: and let me add, this is the true and just Cause for which God punishes these miserable Souldiers to that degree, that they are perpetually in War and Trouble, and have scarce Bread to eat. And I believe, if it were not that God in some sort makes use of 'em to accomplish his Designs upon the Indians, and that they are continually engag'd in War against the Dutch; and have already obtain'd several Victories over those \* Hereticks; if it were not, I say, for these things, I believe

our

\* Note, That this Discovery was made at a time when the Portuguez were continually driving the Dutch from one Garison or another in *Brazil*, of which they had possess'd themselves not long before; and the Conquest the Dutch made of this Country was the occasion of the Establishment of the *West-India* Company in *Holland*, as well for the carrying on of Trade in this part of *America* which the Portuguez possess'd, as for the compleating of the Conquest of it. But 'tis now above 30 Years since they have had any thing beyond the Line. On this side of the Line they yet possess *Surinam* on the Continent, and the Island of *Corassol*, or *Curacao*; and they have still a great many strong Places on the Western Coast of *Africa*, and several Factories in divers places on that Coast.

our Lord *Jesus Christ* would have long since extirpated such cruel and abominable Conquerors. But to return to the *Tapajotos*, and the famous River upon the Banks of which they dwell; I say, the bottom of this River is very good, so that a great English Vessel some Years ago went a considerable way up it, with a design to make Plantations in this Province, and to settle the Trade of Tobacco with the People of the Country, to which end they offer'd 'em very advantagious Terms: but the *Tapajotos* would accept of none, but surpriz'd the English unawares, and kill'd all they could come at after they had seiz'd their Arms, which they keep to this day. Thus they made the rest leave the Country in more haste than they come to it; for they escap'd in their Vessel, and by setting Sail with all speed avoided such another Rencounter, which would have destroy'd 'em all.

## C H A P. LXXVI.

*Of the River Curupatuba, and the Account we receiv'd of Mountains of Gold, Silver, Azure, and precious Stones, among the Inhabitants of this River.*

**A** Bout forty Leagues below the Mouth of the River of the *Tapajotos* we met with the River *Curupatuba*, which comes down on the North-side of the *Amazone*, and gives its Name to the first Indian Town that is at Peace with the Portuguez, and under the Protection of their King. This River is not very big, but very wealthy, if the Natives are to be believ'd, who assure us, that at the end of six days Voyage up the Stream of it, there is a little Rivulet, in the Sand and Banks of which there is a great quantity of Gold found below the place where it washes the foot of an indifferently large Mountain called *Tuquaratinci*. The Indians moreover told us, that near this River there is another place call'd *Picari*, from whence they have often taken a sort of Metal harder than Gold, but very white (without doubt they mean Silver) with which they were wont formerly to make Hatchets  
and

and Knives; but finding the Tools made of this Metal were apt to have their Edg turn'd when any Stress was put to 'em, they did not make any account of 'em. They further gave us an account, That near the Strait I have spoken of, there are two Hills, one of which by the Signs they gave of it, is in all probability a Hill of *Azure*; and it seems the other, which they call *Penagara*, when the Sun shines, or when the Nights are clear and bright, glitters and sparkles as if it were full of rich Diamonds. They assur'd us that horrible Noises were heard in it from time to time, which is a certain sign that this Mountain contains Stones of a great Value in its Entrails.

---

CHAP. LXXVII.

*Of the River Ginipape, which has Treasures of Gold in its Banks, and is famous for a good Soil for Tobacco, and Sugar-Canes.*

**T**HE River *Ginipape* which comes down on the North-side, and enters into the *Amazone* 60 Leagues below the Villages of *Curupatuba*, promises as great Treasures and as rich Mountains as those of which we have

\* M

just

just now spoken. The Indians assure us of so much Gold along the Banks of it, that if it be according to their Relation, this one River possesses more Riches than are in all *Peru*. The Lands this River waters are of the Government of *Maragnon*, which is in the hands of *Benedito Maziel*: And without counting the great Extent of this Country, which alone is larger than all *Spain* join'd together, and that it contains several Mines of which we have very certain knowledg; I shall only say that generally the Ground of it is of the best kind for the Production of all sorts of Grain and Fruit, and what may turn to the Account of those that inhabit it, that is to be found in all the vast Extent of the great River of *Amazons*. This Country is situate on the North-side, and comprehends several great Provinces of Savages. But that which is yet more considerable is, that in this Country are those Fields so famous for the Production of prodigious quantities of *Tucui*. Our Enemies the Dutch have given a Reputation to these Lands, and have often found by Experience, not only the Goodness and Fertility of the Soil, but also the vast Profits with which this alone is capable of enriching its Inhabitants: Therefore they could never forget this sweet place, but have made Plantations there several times, tho to their Damage

*the River of Amazons.* (171)

mage and Sorrow, because they have been always forc'd out of 'em by the Portuguez. Therefore 'tis worth Consideration, that this Place is very good to make great Plantations of Tobacco, and that there's no part of all the Countries that have been discover'd that is better for the planting of Canes, and for making of Sugar. This Soil returns all the Cultivation that is bestow'd upon it with Usury, and produces all sorts of Provision in extraordinary plenty: There are very fine pieces of Pasture-ground, which in their vast Extent would feed an infinite number of all sorts of Cattle. Six Leagues above the place where this River empties it self into the *Amazone*, the Portuguez had a Fort which they call'd *Del Destierro*, that is [*The Fort of Banishment*] kept only by thirty Souldiers, and some pieces of Artillery, which was of more use to keep the Indians that are reduc'd under the Power of the Portuguez, in Fear and Subjection, and to maintain the Authority of the Governor, than to secure the River and obstruct the Passage of an Enemy. This Fort has been since demolish'd by *Benedito Maxiel* with the Consent of the Governor of *Curupa*, which is thirty Leagues lower down the River: But it is to be remark'd, that it was situate in a place of some Consideration, seeing

(172)

*A Discovery of*  
their Enemies Vessels were oblig'd to pay  
Custom for their Passage that way.

---

CHAP. LXXVIII.

*Of the River Paranaiba.*

TEN Leagues below the River *Gini-*  
*pape* on the South-side is a fine, large  
and noble River that comes to render Ho-  
mage to the *Amazone*, into which it dis-  
charges it self by a Mouth two Leagues  
wide. The People of the Country call it  
*Paranaiba*; there are upon the Banks of it  
some Villages of Indians that are at Peace  
with the Portuguez, and that have settled  
themselves upon the Mouth of this River,  
in Obedience to the Orders of the Governor  
of this Province. There are many other  
Nations further up in the Country, but we  
could not have any satisfactory Account of  
'em any more than of divers other things  
upon this great River.

†

CHAP.



CHAP. LXXIX.

*A farther Account of the River of Amazons:  
Of the multitude of Islands near the Mouth  
of it, inhabited by an infinite Number of  
People of different Nations.*

**T**WO Leagues below the River *Ginipape*, of which I have given some account in the 77th Chapter, our River of *Amazons* begins to divide it self into divers great Arms, which form that great Number of Islands that seem to float upon its Waters, till it enters into the Sea. These Islands are inhabited by Nations that differ one from another, both in their Languages and Customs. Not but that most of 'em understand the Language of *Brazil* very well, which is the general Tongue in those Parts. The Number of these Islands is so great, and the People that dwell in 'em so different, that 'tis not possible for me to give a particular Account of what is observable amongst 'em, without composing another Volume. However I'll name some of the most considerable and best known amongst 'em, as the *Tapuyas*,  
and

(174) *A Discovery of*

and the valiant *Pacaxas*, which last dwell on the side of a River (the Name of which they bear) that enters into the *Amazone* eighty Leagues above the River *Paranaiba*, and upon the Bank of this last River too. These Islands are so well peopled, that there's no end of the number of the Inhabitants of 'em, nor indeed of their Villages; insomuch that some of the Portuguez assur'd me, they had seen no Countries better stock'd with People through the whole Extent of the *Amazone*.

---

C H A P. LXXX.

*Of the Town of Commuta.*

**F**Orty Leagues below the *Pacaxas* lies the Town of *Commuta*, which formerly was much noted not only for the multitude of its Inhabitants, but likewise because it us'd to be the place of rendezvouz, where the Indians assembled their Armies when they were about to make any Incursions upon their Enemies: But since *Brazil* has been conquer'd, it is almost uninhabited, the People being retir'd into  
other

*the River of Amazons.* (175)

other Parts; so that Provision is scarce there, only for lack of a little Care and Pains to manure the Ground, which still retains its former Fruitfulness; and that's all that remains there, unless it be a small number of the Natives: Tho 'tis the most lovely Situation to dwell in, and has the most agreeable Prospect in the World, so that it would continually furnish those that should settle in it with all the Conveniences and Pleasures of Life.

---

CHAP. LXXXI.

*Of the River of the Tocantins, and of a French Man that sail'd into this Country to fetch the Sand of it.*

**B**Ehind the Town of *Commuta* passes the River of the *Tocantins*, to throw it self into the *Amazone*, and has the Reputation in this Country of being very rich, and that not without good reason in all appearance: yet the Worth of it has not been yet known by any, but only by one French Man, who was wont to come ashore upon the Banks of it every Year, and return'd with his Vessels loaded only with the Earth, out  
of

of which, by refining, he got a quantity of Gold. 'Tis said he enrich'd himself with this Trade, without ever daring to let the Natives know the Value of the Earth he carried away, for fear they should become his Enemies, when they came to know what Riches were in their Sands, and so should take up Arms against him to hinder him from transporting this Commodity as he was wont to do. Some Portuguez Souldiers going from *Phernambuc* some Years ago, with a Priest in their Company, past over all the *Cordelier* Mountains, and arriv'd at the Source of the River of the *Tocantins*, with a design to make some new Discovery, and to seek for some Golden Mountains; and having a mind to know this River, and to go down quite to its Mouth, were so unhappy as to fall into the hands of the *Tocantins*, who kill'd 'em every one. And 'tis not long since the Chalice was found in the hands of these Indians, with which the good Priest celebrated Mass during his Travels.

---

C H A P. LXXXII.

*Of the Fort of Para which is in the hands of the Portugeze, and of the Island du Soleil, or of the Sun, and the Commodiousness of it for Plantations.*

**T**HE Great Fort of *Para* is built Thirty Leagues below *Commata*, it belongs to the *Portugeze*, and is under the command of a Governor, who has the oversight of all other Officers of Garrisons belonging to this Government; he has for his Garrison ordinarily Three Companies of Foot, under the Command of as many Captains, who are oblig'd to be always ready at hand for the preservation and defence of this Fort; but the Officers as well as the Governor of the Place, are under the Jurisdiction of the Governor of *Maragnon*, and are absolutely to obey his Orders. The Government of *Maragnon* is at above 130 Leagues distance from *Para* down along the River, and then up towards *Brezil*, which occasions great inconveniencies in the Conduct of Affairs in relation to the Government of *Para*. And if we should ever be so hap-  
N py

py as to plant this River with our People, it will be necessary to make the Governor of *Para* Independant, and Absolute, as the Person who possesses the Keys of the whole Country. Not that the place where the Fort of *Para* is now Situated, is the best that can be chosen in the Opinion of many Persons of good Judgment; but if this Discovery be further Improv'd and Advanc'd; it will be an easie matter to change it; and I don't find any place more proper for it than the Island *du Soleil* which is Fourteen Leagues below the Mouth of the River: This is doubtless the place to be absolutely fix'd on, not only because it affords abundance of Advantages for the Accomodation of Life, the Ground being extraordinarily Fertile, and capable of maintaining as many People as one can desire to settle there; but also for the convenient harbouring of Vessels: 'Tis a great Harbour shelter'd from all sorts of bad Winds, in which Ships may ride with great Safety, and when they have a mind to Sail, they need only wait for the full of the Moon, at which time the Sea is higher than ordinary, and they may pass over all the Sands, which renders the entrance of  
this

this River difficult; which is none of the least Conveniencies. This Island is above Ten Leagues in Compass; there is very good Water in it, and abundance of both Sea and River-Fish, there is an infinite number of Crabs, which are the ordinary Food of the *Indians*, and other poor People; and is now the main support of *Para*; for there is no Isle all there about, wherein they go more a Hunting for the Subsistence of the Garrison, and Inhabitants of it, than in this.

---

C H A P. LXXXIII.

*Of the Mouth of the River of Amazons, Eighty Leagues in Breadth, joyning to the North-Cape on one side, and to the Coasts of Brezil on the other.*

**T**Wenty Six Leagues below the Island of the *Sun* directly under the Line, this great River of *Amazons* is 84 Leagues wide, bounded on the South-side by *Zaparara*, and on the other side by the *North-Cape*, and here at last discharges it self into the Ocean. It may be said to be a Sea of Fresh-Water, mixing it self with the Salt-Water-Sea. 'Tis the No-

blest and Largest River in the whole known World. This is the River otherwise call'd *Orellane*, and by some *Maragnon*, so often desir'd, and so much sought after, and so often miss'd by the *Spaniards* of *Pern*; and here at Length it flows into the Sea, after it has water'd a Country of 1276 Leagues in Length, after it has furnished a multitude of Nations with its Fruitfulness and Plenty; and in a word after it has divided *America* into Two Parts, almost in the widest Place of it; and furnish'd the Natives with a great Channel into which the Best, the Richest and most Pleasant Rivers, that come down from all the Mountains and Coasts of the New World discharge their Waters. And 'tis farther remarkable, that against the Mouth of it, for above 30 Leagues at Sea, you may take up Fresh-Water during the Ebb of the Tide, which is an extraordinary refreshment to those Ships especially that, in coming from *Europe*, have Sail'd 2000 Leagues before they Arrive here.

Thus in short I have given a Relation of an ample Discovery of this great River. Which tho' it possesses so great Treasures, yet excludes no Nation in the World from 'em, but on the contrary, in-



invites all sorts of People to reap the Profits of the Riches with which it so abounds. It offers to the Poor a plentiful Maintenance, to the Labourer the Liberal Recompence of his Toil; to the Merchant a Profitable Trade, to the Soldier an Occasion of Signalizing himself; to the Rich an Improvement of their Wealth; to Gentlemen Honorable Employments; to Noblemen Large Provinces; and to Kings themselves Empires, and a New World. But those who of all others are call'd upon to promote such new Conquests, and ought to be most heartily concern'd in 'em, are such as with the greatest Affection, seek the Advancement of the Glory of God, and are Zealously bent to design the Salvation of the Souls of an Innumerable Multitude of Idolatrous and Heathenish *Indians*, who want the Help and Light the Faithful Ministers of the Gospel should furnish them withal, to dispel the shadows of Sin and Death, with which those poor Wretches have been so long benighted. And let none Excuse themselves from an Attempt of this kind: Here's Work enough to employ every one of us, and how great a Number soever of Labourers should devote themselves

to it, there will still be more wanting for so great a Harvest. This New Vine-yard will still want more hands to Cultivate and Dress it, how able and how fervent soever they should prove, who shall be engag'd in this Service, But it is rather to be wish'd than expected, that we shall ever see this New World Subjected to the Keys of the Church of *Rome*. I hope all the Illustrious Catholick Princes of *Christendom*, (to whom may it please the Almighty to grant many and happy Years,) will each of 'em be inspir'd from Heaven with Zeal for so Holy an Enteprize as the Conquest of Souls; some by their wonted Liberalities, for the Maintenance and Subsistence of Priests and Ministers of the Gospel, and others by their care to provide and convey Clergymen into those Countries: And all of 'em have reason to esteem it a great happiness for them that in the Age wnerin they live, this difficult and troublesom way should be open'd, to bring more Nations, and those more populous at once into the Bosom of the Church, than all the rest that have been hitherto discover'd in the whole New World.

C H A P. LXXXIV.

*A Computation of the Longitudes, Latitudes, and Distances of Places upon this Great River.*

FROM the Mouth of *Napo*, which is on the South of the *Amazone*, to *Anete*, are Forty seven Leagues. *Anete* is under the Line, on the South-side of this great River.

From *Anete* to the *Aguarico*, Eighteen Leagues. The Mouth of this River, is on the North-side of the *Amazone* and under the Line also.

From the *Aguarico* to the *Chevelus* Twenty Leagues. The Mouth of this River is also on the North of the *Amazone*, and declines a little from the Line towards the South.

From the *Chevelus* to the *Curaray*, Forty Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South of the *Amazone*, in the Second Degree of Southern Latitude.

From the *Curaray* to the *Maragnon*, Eighty Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South of the *Amazone*, having Four Degrees of Southern Latitude,

N 4

and

and Three Hundred and Seven Degrees and Fifty Minutes of Longitude.

From the *Maragnon* to the beginning of the Province of the *Omaquas*, Sixty Leagues. All this Province consists in great Islands.

From the beginning of this Province to a certain great Habitation of the same, One Hundred and Nineteen Leagues. This is an Isle, on the South-side of the Channel of the *Amazone*, having three Degrees of Southern Latitude, and Three hundred and twelve Degrees, and Fifty five Minutes of Longitude.

From this Habitation to the *Putomayo*, Seventeen Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the North-side of the great *Amazone*.

From the *Putomayo* to the *Yetau*, Fifty Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South-side of the *Amazone*, and hath Three Degrees Thirty Minutes of Southern Latitude.

From the *Yetau* to the end of the Province of the *Omaquas*, Fourteen Leagues. In this place there is a great and puissant Habitation in an Isle.

From the end of this Province to the *Cuzco*, Twenty five Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South-side of the

*the River of Amazons.* 185

the *Amazone* having Five Degrees of Southern Latitude, and Three Hundred Fifteen Degrees, and Fifty Minutes of Longitude.

From the *Cuzco* to the *Village of Gold*, Twenty eight leagues. This place is on the South-bank of the Channel of the great *Amazone*.

From the *Village of Gold* to the *Yupura*, Fourteen Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the North-side of the *Amazone*, and hath Three Degrees of Southern Latitude.

From the *Yupura* to the *Tapi*, Four Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South-side of the *Amazone*.

From the *Tapi* to the *Catua*, Twenty five Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the South-side of *Amazone*, and towards the *Green Lake*, which is formed by the great *Amazone*.

From the *Catua* and the *Green Lake* to the First Mouth of the *Araganatuba*, Six Leagues. This is on the North-side of the *Amazone*.

From the First Mouth to the Second of the *Araganatuba*, Sixteen Leagues, on the North-side of the *Amazone*.

From

From the Second Mouth of the *Araganatuba* to the end of the Province of *Curusiraris*, Twenty two Leagues. All this Province is on the South of the great River.

From the end of *Curusiraris* to the beginning of the Province of *Yoriman*, Two Leagues, on the South-side of the *Amazone*.

From the beginning of *Yoriman* to a great and very long Habitation, Twenty three Leagues, on the South of the River to Four Degrees of that Latitude, and Three hundred nineteen Degrees, and Thirty Minutes of Longitude.

From this long Habitation to the Isle *Yoriman*, Thirty two Leagues. On the South-bank side of the *Amazone*.

From this Isle to the end of the Province of *Yoriman*, Ten Leagues; on the South-side of the *Amazone*.

From the end of *Yoriman* to the *Cuchiguara* Two Leagues. The Mouth of this River is also on the South of the *Amazone*.

From the *Cuchiguara* to the *Basurura* Thirty two Leagues. The Mouth of this River is on the North-side of the *Amazone*, and hath Four Degrees, Thirty Minutes, of Southern Latitude.

From

*the River of Amozons.* 187

From the *Basurura* to the *Rio Negro*, or *Black River*, Thirty Leagues. The Mouth of this River is also on the North-side of the *Amazone*, having Four Degrees of Southern Latitude, and Three Hundred Twenty Two Degrees, and Twenty Minutes of Longitude.

From *Rio-Negro* unto the *Moderá* are Four Leagues; the Mouth of this River being on the South of the *Amazone*.

From the *Moderá* to the beginning of the Isle *Topinambas* Twenty Eight Leagues. This great Isle is in the River of the *Amazons*, towards the South-side.

From the beginning to the end of this Isle, Sixty two Leagues. In this place is a Great and Puissant Habitation of the *Topinambi* having Three Degrees of Southern Latitude, and Three Hundred twenty seven Degrees, Thirty Minutes of Longitude.

From the end of *Topinambas* to the *Cunuris*, Thirty Leagues; the Mouth of which River is to the North of the *Amazone*.

From

From the *Cunuris* to the *Bosphore* of the *Amazone*, Twenty four Leagues. This Strait hath Two Degrees and Forty Minutes of Southern Latitude; and Three hundred and twenty eight Degrees, and Fifty Minutes in Longitude.

From the *Bosphore* to the *Tapajosos*, Forty Leagues; the Mouth of which River is on the South-side of the great *Amazone*.

From the *Tapajosos* to the *Curupatuba*, Forty Leagues; the Mouth of which River is on the North-side of the great *Amazone*.

From the *Curupatuba* to the Fort of *Destierro*, Fifty four Leagues; which Fort is also on the North-side of the great River.

From the foresaid Fort to the *Ginipape*, Six Leagues; the Mouth of which River is on the North-side also, having Two Degrees of Southern Latitude, and Three hundred thirty one Degrees and Fifty Minutes of Longitude. And about Two Leagues from this *Ginipape* towards the Sea, the great River of *Amazons* begins to open by little and little towards its great Mouth into the Sea.

- From



*the River of Amazons.* 189

From the *Ginipape* to the *Paranaiba*, Ten Leagues; the Mouth of which River is on the South-side of the *Amazon*.

From the *Paranaiba* to the *Pacaxas*, Forty Leagues; the Mouth of which is also on the South of the *Amazon*.

From the *Pacaxas* to *Commuta*, Forty Leagues. This place is also on the South-side of the *Amazon*.

From *Commuta* to *Para*, Thirty Leagues. This Town is also on the South-bank of the great Mouth of the *Amazon*, having one Degree and Thirty Minutes of South Latitude.

From *Para* to the *Isle du Soleil*, Fourteen Leagues. This Isle is also near to the same South-bank. And from *Para* to *Zaparara*, Forty Leagues; which is a Cape on the extremity of the South-bank of the great River, having Thirty five Minutes of South Latitude, and Three hundred thirty seven Degrees and ten Minutes of Longitude. So the whole length of this great River of *Amazons*, is One thousand two hundred seventy six Leagues.

From the *Ginipape* to *Corupa*, which is on the North-side of the Mouth of this River, Thirty Leagues.

From

From *Corupa* to the North Cape, the distance is not well known: This Cape is on the extremity of the North-bank of the great River, having Forty five Minutes of North Latitude, and Three hundred thirty three Degrees, and Fifty Minutes of Longitude.

---

*The End.*

---

A N  
A C C O U N T  
O F A  
V O Y A G E  
U P T H E

*River de la Plata,*

And thence over Land to

**P E R U.**

With Observations on the Inhabitants, as well *Indians* and *Spaniards*; the Cities, Commerce, Fertility, and Riches of that Part of *America*.

By *Monf. Acarete du Biscay*.

L O N D O N:

Printed for *Samuel Buckley*, at the *Dolphin* over against *St. Dunstons Church* in *Fleetstreet*. 1698.

A. C. G. O. U. L. I. N. I.

V. O. Y. A. G. E.

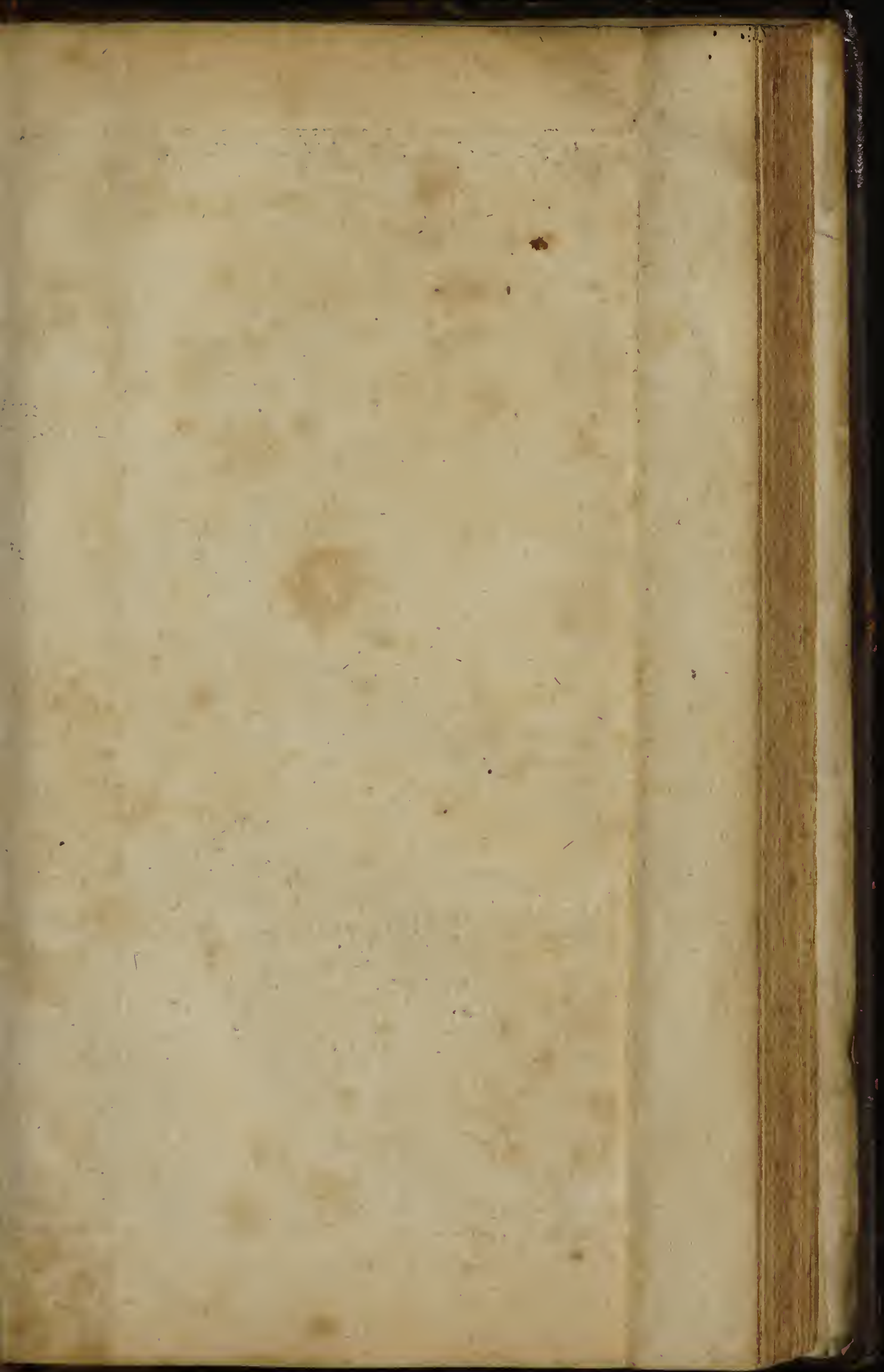
R. A. C. E. S. D. E. L. A. P. L. A. S.

P. E. R. U.

1793

1793

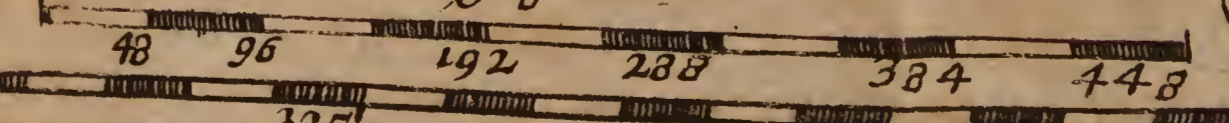
1793





A MAP  
of the Provinces  
**PARAGUAY**  
and  
**TUCUMAN**  
with  
the River Plate  
London Printed for S. Buckley

English Miles



4

---

*A Relation of Mons. Acarete  
du Biscay's Voyage up the  
River de la Plata, and  
from thence by Land to Pe-  
ru, and his Observations in  
it.*

**T**HE Inclination I always had to Travelling, made me leave my Father's House very young, but I can truly aver, that I was not so much prompted to it out of pure Curiosity to see Forreign Countries, as out of hope to acquire Knowledge and improve my Judgment, which for the future might be helpful to me, not only in my private Concerns, but likewise render me more serviceable to my King and Country, which I declare was the chief aim of my Voyages. I went first into *Spain*, where I tarried long enough to learn their Language, particularly at *Cadiz*. The  
O fancy

fancy took me to go to the *West-Indies* possess'd by the *Spaniards*, for I often heard them talk of the Beauty and Fertility of the Country, and the great Riches they draw from thence, but then I was at a loss how to bring it about, because 'tis very difficult for a Stranger, to get into those Parts ; but there happen'd a conjuncture which favour'd my Design, and gave me an opportunity to proceed in it, in the manner following.

In the Year 1654, *Oliver Cromwell* at that time Protector of the Commonwealth of *England*, sent Admiral *Blake* with a Squadron of Men of War towards the Coasts of *Algarve* and *Andalusia*, to wait for the *Spanish Gallions* which come yearly from the *Indies*. The *Spaniards* being advertis'd of it, resolv'd to equip a Fleet with all expedition to oppose the *English* and frustrate their design: To this end they set out 28 Men of War and 6 Fireships, under the Command of *Don Paul de Contreras*, whose Vice-Admiral was the *Amirante Castana*, on board whom was I. The Two Fleets came up with each other, near *Cape St. Vincent*, where they staid many Days ; but the *English* perceiving they



up the River de la Plata. 3

they were like to make nothing on't, retir'd towards *Lisbon*, and the *Spaniards* stood into *Cadiz*, where all the Gallions safely arriv'd in the beginning of the Year 1655, except the Vice-Admiral, which was lost in the Channel of *Bahama* upon the Coasts of *Florida*. Sometime after this, the *English* having declar'd War against the *Spaniards* more openly, by taking *Jamaica*, the Navigation to the *West-Indies* was a long time interrupted, by their Cruisers hovering about *Cadiz* and *San Lucar*, where they intercepted some Ships coming from the *Indies* richly laden, took one of the biggest, burnt Two others, and put the rest to flight, and afterwards went to the *Canaries*, where they burnt most of the Flota that were arriv'd there from *New Spain*, and waited orders from *Madrid*, what course to take to escape falling into the hands of the *English*. While these things were doing, the *Dutch* who sought to make their advantage of the Troubles that the *Spaniards* were embroil'd in, sent several Ships to the River de la Plata, laden with Goods and *Negroes*, which they took in at *Angola* and *Congo*: These Ships being arriv'd in that River, and come up to *Buenos Ayres*, the Inhabi-

bitants of the place who had a long time been depriv'd of the Supplies which they had us'd to receive by the *Spanish* Gallions (who were hinder'd by the *English* from making their constant Voyages) and were besides in want of *Negroes* and other things, wrought so far upon the Governor, that for a Present which they oblig'd the *Hollanders* to give him, and satisfying the Customs due to the King of *Spain*, they were permitted to Land and Trade there.

Mean time the *Spanish* Ministers (apprehending lest the Interruption of the Commerce, and the scarcity of *European* Commodities in those Parts, might constrain the Inhabitants to Traffick with Strangers (which 'tis their Interest to prevent as much as they can) thought fit to grant Licences to several of their private Subjects to Trade to the *Indies* at their own proper risque. A certain Cavalier took one of them, and fitted out a Ship at *Cadiz*, where I abode at that time; I resolv'd to go in her, and that the more willingly, because I had formerly had some dealings with him. He very friendly consented to let me go under his Name for his Nephew, that I might conceal my being a Forreigner, which

which if known would have stopt my Voyage, because in *Spain* they allow none but Native *Spaniards* to go in their Ships to the *Indies*. We set Sail about the latter end of *December* 1657, in a Ship of 450 Tuns, and in 105 Days reach'd the Mouth of the River *de la Plata*, where we met a *French* Frigat, Captain *Foran* Commander, and fought her some time, we got clear of her, and continued our Course till we came before *Buenos Ayres*, where we found 22 *Dutch* Ships, and among them 2 *English*, Laden homewards with Bulls-hides, Plate, and *Spanish*-wool, which they had receiv'd in exchange for their Commodities; a few days after 3 *Dutch* Ships going out of the Road encounter'd Captain *Foran* and another Frigat, nam'd the *Mareschale*, Comanded by the Chevalier *de Fontenay*; after a tough dispute the *Hollanders* boarded and took the *Mareschale*, put all her Men to the Sword, and the Chevalier among the rest.

This accident alarum'd those of *Buenos Ayres*, and made them put themselves upon their guard, imagining there was a *French* Squadron come into the River to make an attempt upon their Country.

Whereupon they resolv'd to send for aid to Count *Albaeliste*, Viceroy over all the *Spanish Acquisitions in America*, and Resident at *Lima in Peru*; who caus'd to be Levy'd with much difficulty and some force but 100 Men, which were not sent to them till 8 or 9 Months after, under the Command of *Don Sebastian Comacho*.

But before I proceed further, 'tis fit I deliver my Observations concerning the *River de la Plata*, and the Countries through which it runs. In those Parts 'tis call'd the *Paraguay*, but more vulgarly the *Great Parana*; probably, because the River of *Parana* falls into it above the Town *de las Corrientes*. 'Its Mouth (which lies in the 35th. Degree of *Southern Latitude*, on that side the *Equinoctial Line*) is between *Cape de Castillos* and *Cape de Sant Antonio*, about 80 Leagues distant from each, Tho' it be deep enough every where, yet the commonest Road into it, and most us'd by Sailors is on the North-side, from *Castillos* to *Montvidio*, which is half-way to *Buenos Ayres*, and notwithstanding there is a Channel on the same North-side from *Montvidio* to *Buenos Ayres*, the shallowest place in which is Three Fathom deep,  
yet

yet for more security they cross over against *Monvidio* into the South Channel, because 'tis broader and has Three Fathom and a half Water at least where 'tis shallowest; all the bottom is muddy till within 2 Leagues of *Buenos Ayres* where lyes a sand Bank, there they take in Pilots to Steer them to a place call'd the *Posso* just before the Town, distant a Cannon shot from Shore, wherein no Vessels may enter but such as have a Licence from the King of *Spain*, those that have no such permission are oblig'd to Anchor a League Lower. The River is full of Fish, but of them there are hardly more than Seven or Eight sorts good to eat, there are abundance of those Whales call'd *Gibars*, and Sea-dogs who commonly bring forth their young ashore, and whose Skin is fit for several uses. I was told that about 5 or 6 Years before I came there, the River was almost dry'd up for some days, no Water being left but only in the middle Channel, and there so little, that they forded it on Horseback, as one may do most of the Rivers that fall into that *de la Plata*, in which there are likewise a great many *Otters*, with whose Skins the Savages Cloath themselves.

The Country on the North-side of the River *de la Plata* is of great extent, Inhabited by none but Savages, call'd *Charuas*; most of the little Islands that lie all along the River, and the Shore sides are cover'd with Woods full of Wild Boars. From *Cape de Castillos* up to *Rio Negro*, as well as from the same *Cape* to *San Paulo* bordering upon *Brazil*; the Coasts are uninhabited, tho' the Country, especially along the River seems to be very good, having little Rivulets running down from the Hills thro' the Plains. The *Spaniards* settled first there, but afterwards remov'd to *Buenos Ayres*, because 'twas troublesom to cross over the great *Parana* to go to *Peru*.

I went ashore frequently beyond *Rio Negro*, but never farther than Three quarters of a League into the Land, there are but few Savages to be seen, and they have their Habitations a good way up in the Country; those I met with were well made, with long Hair and very little Beard; they wear nothing but a great Skin, made of little ones patch'd together, that hangs down to their heels, and a piece of Leather under their Feet, ty'd with Straps about their Ankles. For Ornament they bind a Fillet of some Stuff

Stuff about their Heads, which comes over the Fore-head, and keeps the Hair back behind. The Women have no other Garment but these Skins, which they gird about their Wastes, and cover their heads with a sort of little Hats made of Rushes of divers Colours.

From *Rio Negro* to *Las Corrientes* and the River of *Parana*, the Country is well stockt with Bulls and Cows, there are likewise a great many Stags, whose Skins they sell for right Buff. The Savages about *Rio Negro* are the only People from the Sea thither, that keep Correspondence with those of *Buenos Ayres*, and the *Casiques*, and *Couracas* their Leaders do Hommage to the Governor of that Place, from whence they are but about 20 Leagues distant. One of the chief *Spanish* Towns on that side is *Las Siete Corrientes*, Situate near the place where the Two Rivers *Paraguay* and *Parana* meet. Upon the *Parana* stand Three or Four Villages pretty far from each other, and thinly Peopled, tho' the Country be very proper for Vineyards, and has enough planted already to supply the Neighbouring Parts with Wine. The Inhabitants are under the Jurisdiction of a Governour resident at  
*Assomption*

*Assomption*, which is the most important Place the *Spaniards* have in that Country, and stands higher up the River *Paraguay* on the North-side; 'tis the Metropolitane City, a Bishop's Seat, has several very neat Churches and Convents, and is well crowded with Inhabitants, because a great many Idle People, and such as have run out their Fortunes and can live no longer in *Spain* or *Peru*, flock thither as to their last refuge. The Land abounds in Corn, Millet, Sugar, Tobacco, Honey, Cattle, Oaks fit for Shipping, Pine-Trees for Masts, and particularly in that Herb, call'd, the *Herb of Paraguay*, which they drive a great Trade in all over the *West-Indies*; and this obliges the Merchants of *Chili* and *Peru*, to hold a Correspondence with those of *Paraguay*; because, without that Herb (with which they make a refreshing Liquor with Water and Sugar, to be drank lukewarm) the Inhabitants of *Peru*, Savages and others, especially those that work in the Mines, could not subsist, for the Soil of the Country being full of Mineral Veins, the Vapours that rise out of the Ground suffocate them, and nothing but that Liquor can recover them again, which revives and restores



restores them to their former Vigour.

In this City of *Assomption*, the Native *Indians*, as well as *Spaniards* are very courteous and obliging to Strangers. They indulge themselves in a great deal of liberty, even with respect to Women, insomuch that being often necessitated to Sleep in the open Air (because of the excessive Heat) they spread their Quilts in the Streets, and lie there all Night Men and Women together: Nor is any Body scandaliz'd at it. Having plenty of all things good to eat and drink, they give themselves up to Ease and Idleness, and don't much trouble themselves with Trading abroad, nor heaping up Money, which upon that account is very scarce among 'em, contenting themselves with trucking the Commodities of their own Product, for others more necessary and useful to them.

Further up in the Country, that is to say, towards the Head of the River *Uruguay*, in the Province of *Paraguay*, are many Settlements of Colonies, transplanted thither by the *Jesuits Missionaries*, that prevail'd upon the Savages in those Parts, who are naturally tractable, to quit their Woods and Mountains, and  
come

come and dwell together in Villages in a Civil Community, where they instructed them in the Christian Religion, taught them Mechanicks, to play upon Musical Instruments, and several other Arts convenient to Human Life. Thus the Missionaries who came upon a Religious Motive, are largely recompenc'd by the Temporal Advantages which they reap here. The report that there were Golden Mines in this Country, could not be kept so close, but that the Spaniards had some inkling of it, and among others, Don Hiacinto de Laris Governor of *Buenes Ayres*, who about the Year 1653, had orders from the King of Spain, to go and visit these Settlements, and examine into their Wealth. At first coming he was well receiv'd, but perceiving that he began to inspect their Riches, and search for Gold, The Savages who are shy of working in the Mines, took up Arms, and forc'd him and his Followers Fifty in Number to depart out of their Country. The Governor who succeeded him, inform'd himself more particularly of this matter, and to make the best use of his Intelligence, inter'd into a strict Alliance with the *Jesuits* of his own Government, who hold a Correspondence

dence with the rest of their Fraternity ; and having got a considerable Sum from the *Hollanders* for leave to Trade at *Buenos Ayres*, he engag'd the *Jesuits* to furnish him 100000 Crowns in Gold for the value in Silver, for lightness of Carriage. But this same Governor being arrested by the King of *Spain's* Order, for permitting the *Dutch* to Trade at *Buenos Ayres*, his Gold was seiz'd and confiscated, which upon trial prov'd to be much finer than that of *Pern*, and by this and other Circumstances, they discover'd, that it came from the Mines found out by the *Jesuits* in these parts.

On the South-side of the River *de la Plata*, from *Cape Sant Antonio*, to within 30 Leagues of *Buenos Ayres*, 'tis dangerous Sailing, because of the Banks that lie in the way ; wherefore they always go on the North-side, as I said before, till they come up so far, then they cross over to the South-side which is very safe ; especially when the Wind blows against the Stream of the River and swells it ; for when a Westerly Wind blows from Land, the Water falls ; however when the Water is at the lowest, 'tis Three Fathom and a half deep, both in the North and South Channels. When we  
en-

enter'd into the South-Channel, we came in sight of those Vast Plains extending to *Buenos Ayres*, and thence as far as the *River Salladillo*, 60 Leagues short of *Cordona*, which are so cover'd with all sorts of Cattle, that notwithstanding multitudes of them are daily destroy'd for their Skins, there's no Sign of their diminution.

As soon as we arriv'd at the *Cape of Buenos Ayres*, we gave notice of it to the Governor, who understanding that we had the King of *Spain's* Licence for coming thither, (without which he could not have permitted us entrance into the place, unless he would have broke his Orders) he sent the Kings Officers on board to visit our Ship, according to custom, which done, we landed our Goods, and laid them up in a Warehouse hired for the time of our stay. They consisted chiefly in Linnen Cloath, particularly that made at *Rouen*, which goes off very well in those Parts, as also in Silks, Ribans, Thread, Needles, Swords, Horse-shoes, and other Iron-work, Working-tools of all sorts, Drugs, Spices, Silk and Woollen-Stockings, Woollen-Cloath, Serges, and other Woollen-Stuffs, and generally in every thing

thing fit for Cloathing: which as we were inform'd were proper commodities for those Parts. Now the Custom is, that as soon as a Licens'd Ship (that is to say which has the King of Spain's Permission) comes to *Buenos Ayres*. The Governor of the Place, or Captain of the Ship dispatches a Messenger to *Peru*, with the Letters from *Spain*, if he has any; or else to acquaint the Merchants with his Arrival, whereupon some of them immediately set out to *Buenos Ayres*, or else send Commissions to their Correspondents, to buy up what Wares they think convenient. 'Twas my fortune to be sent upon both these Errands, for among a great many Letters that we brought with us, was a large packet from his Catholick Majesty for *Peru*, enclos'd in a Leaden Box, as all the Dispatches from the *Spanish* Court to the *Indies* commonly are; to the end, that if the Ship that carries them should be in eminent peril of falling into an Enemies Hands, they might be flung over board and sunk. This Packet was entrusted to my care, wherein were many Letters to the Vice-Roy of *Peru*, and other Prime Officers in those Parts, signifying the Birth of the Prince  
of

of *Spain*: and I carry'd likewise an Inventory attested by the Kings Officers at *Buenos Ayres* of the greatest part of our Lading, to be shewn to the Merchants of *Potosi*; they rely'd upon the conditions of the Goods as specified in the Inventory, and so bargain'd for what they lik'd, but their effects did not come to 'em till Seven or Eight Months after.

---

*A Description of Buenos Ayres.*

**B**Efore I say any thing of my Journey to *Peru*, I will set down what I observ'd remarkable at *Buenos Ayres* whilst I tarry'd there. The Air is pretty temperate, much as 'tis in *Andaloufia*, but not quite so warm, the Rains fall almost as often in Summer as Winter; and the Rain in sultry weather usually breeds divers kinds of Toads, which are very common in this Country, but are not venemous. The Town stands upon a rising Ground on the side of the River *de la Plata*, a Musquet shot from the Channel, in an Angle of Land made  
by

by a little Rivulet, call'd *Riochuelo*, which falls into the River a quarter of a League from the Town; it contains 400 Houses, has no enclosure, neither Wall nor Ditch, and nothing to defend it but a little Fort of Earth surrounded with a Ditch, which commands the River, and has Ten Iron Guns, the biggest of which is a Twelve Pounder; there the Governor resides who has but 150 Men in Garrison, which are form'd into Three Companies Commanded by Three Captains, whom he appoints at will, and indeed he changes them so often, that there is hardly a Wealthy Citizen but has been a Captain; these Companies are not always full, because the Souldiers are drawn by the cheapness of Living in those Parts to desert frequently, notwithstanding they endeavour to keep them in the Service by a large pay, which is *per diem* Four Reals, worth 1 s. 6 d. *English*, and a Loaf of 3 d. *ob.* which is as much as one Man can eat. But the Governor keeps 1200 tame Horses in a Plain thereabouts for his ordinary Service, and in case of necessity to mount the Inhabitants of the Place, and form a small Body of Cavalry. Besides this Fort, there is a little Bastion at the

P Mouth

Mouth of the Rivulet wherein they keep Guard, there are but Two Iron-Guns mounted upon it, each carrying a Three Pound Ball; this commands the place where the Barks come ashore to deliver or take in goods, which are liable to be visited by the Officers of the Bastion when they lade and unlade. The Houses of the Town are built of Earth, because there is but little Stone in all those Parts up as far as *Peru*; they are thatch'd with Canes and Straw, have no Stories, all the Rooms are of a Floor, and are very Spacious; they have great Court-yards, and behind their Houses large Gardens full of Orange-trees, Lemon-trees, Fig-trees, Apple-trees, Pear-trees, and other Fruit-trees, with store of Herbs, Cabbages, Onions, Garlick, Lettice, Peas, Beans, and especially their Melons are excellent, the Soil being very fat and good; they live very commodiously, and except Wine, which is something dear; they have plenty of all sorts of Victuals, as Beef, Veal, Mutton, Venison, Hares, Coneys, Pullets, Ducks, Wild-geese, Partridges, Pidgeons, Turtles, and all kind of Wild-fowl; and so cheap, that one may buy Partridges for a Penny a piece,



piece, and the rest proportionably. There are likewise abundance of Ostriches who herd in Flocks like Cattle, and tho' they are good Meat, yet none but the Savages eat of them. They make Umbrellas of their Feathers, which are very commodious in the Sun; their Eggs are good, and every body eats of 'em, tho' they say they are of hard Digestion. I saw one thing of these Creatures very remarkable, and that is, while the Hen sits upon the Eggs, they have the Instinct or Foresight to provide for their Young; so five or six days before they come out of the Shell, they set an Egg in each of the four Corners of the place where they sit, these Eggs they break, and when they rot, Worms and Maggots breed in 'em in prodigious numbers, which serve to nourish the Young Ostriches from the time they are hatch'd till they are able to go farther for their sustenance. The Houses of the better sort of Inhabitants are adorn'd with Hangings, Pictures, and other Ornaments and decent Moveables, and all that are tollerably well to pass are serv'd in Plate, and have a great many Servants, *Blacks, Moulatos, Mestices, Indians, Cabres, or Sambos*, who are all Slaves. The *Negroes* come

from *Guinea*; the *Moulatos* are begotten by a *Spaniard* upon a *Black*; the *Mestices* are born of a *Spaniard* and an *Indian*, and the *Sambos* of an *Indian* Man and a *Mestice*, all distinguishable by their Colour and Hair. They employ these Slaves in their Houses, or to cultivate their Grounds, for they have large Farms stock'd with Grain in abundance, as Wheat, Barley and Millet, or to look after their Horses and Mules, who feed upon nothing but Grass all the Year round, or to kill Wild-Bulls, or in fine to do any kind of Service. All the Wealth of these Inhabitants consists in Cattle, wick multiply so prodigiously in this Province, that the Plains are quite cover'd with 'em, particularly with Bulls, Cows, Sheep, Horses, Mares, Mules, Asses, Swine, Deer, and others, insomuch that were it not for a vast number of Dogs, who devour the Calves and other young Beasts, they would over-run the Country, they make so great profit of the Skins and Hides of these Annimals, that a single Instance will be sufficient to shew how far it might be improv'd by good hands: The 22 *Dutch* Ships that we found at *Buenos Ayres* were each of them laden with 13 or 14000 Bull-hides at

at least, which amount to above 300000 *Livers*, or 33500 *l. Sterling*, bought by the *Dutch* at Seven or Eight *Reals* a piece, that is under an *English* Crown, and sold again in *Europe* for Twenty-five *Shillings English* at least. When I express'd my astonishment at the sight of such an infinite number of Cattle, they told me of a Stratagem sometimes made use of, when they apprehend a descent from any Enemies, that is matter of greater wonder, and 'tis this; they drive such a Herd of Bulls, Cows, Horses and other Animals to the Shore-side, that 'tis utterly impossible for any number of Men, even tho' they should not dread the fury of those Wild Creatures, to make their way through so great a drove of Beasts. The First Inhabitants of this place, put every one their mark upon those they could catch, and turn'd 'em into their enclosures, but they multiply'd so fast, that they were forc'd to let 'em loose, and now they go and kill them according as they want 'em, or have occasion to make up a quantity of Hides for Sale. At present they mark only those Horses and Mules which they catch to tame and breed up for Service. Some Persons make a great Trade of sending

them to *Peru*, where they yield 50 *Pata-gons*, or 11 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* *Sterling* a pair. Most of the Dealers in Cattle are very Rich, but of all the Trading People the most considerable are they that Traf-fick in *European* Commodities. Ma-ny of whom are reputed worth 2 or 300000 *Crowns*, or 67000 *l.* *Sterling*. So that a Merchant worth no more than 15 or 20000 *Crowns* is look'd upon as a mean Retailer; of these last there are near 200 Families in the Town, that make 500 Men bearing Arms, besides their Slaves who are three times that Number, but are not to be reckon'd of any Defence, because they are not allow'd to bear Arms: Thus the *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, and their Sons (of whom those that are born upon the place are term'd *Criolos*, to distinguish them from the Natives of *Spain*) and some *Mestices* are the Militia, which with the Souldiers in Garrison, compose a Body of above 600 Men, as I computed them in several Musters, for they draw out on Horse-back Three times a Year near the Town on Festival Days. I observ'd there were many Old Men among them that did not carry Fire-arms, but only a Sword by their side, a Lance in hand, and a Buck-ler

ler at their shoulder: They are also most of them Marry'd and Masters of Families, and consequently have no great stomach to Fighting. They love their Ease and Pleasure, and are entirely devoted to *Venus*; I confess they are in some measure excusable in this point, for most of their Women are extreamly pretty, well shaped, and clear skin'd; and withal so faithful to their Husbands, that no Temptations can prevail with them to loosen the Sacred Knot: But then if their Husbands transgress, they are often punish'd with Poison or Dagger. The Women are more in Number than the Men. Besides *Spaniards*, there are a few *French*, *Hollanders*, and *Genouese*, but all go for *Spaniards*, otherwise there would be no dwelling for them there, especially those that differ in their Religion from the *Roman-Catholicks*, because the Inquisition is settled there.

The Bishop's Revenue amounts to 3000 *Patagons*, or 700 *l. Sterling per Annum*. His Diocess takes in this Town and *Santa Fe*, with the Farms belonging to both; Eight or Ten Priests Officiate in the Cathedral, which is built of Earth as well as the Houses. The *Jesuits* have a College; the *Dominicans*, the *Recol-*

*lects*, and the *Religious de la Mercy*, have each a Convent. There is likewise an Hospital, but there are so few poor People in these Parts that 'tis of little use.

---

*Monsieur Acarete du Biscay's Journey from Buenos Ayres to Peru.*

I Left *Buenos Ayres*, and took the Road to *Cordona*, leaving *Santa Fe* on my right hand, of which place take this account, 'tis a *Spanish* Settlement dependant upon *Buenos Ayres*, the Commander is no more than a Lieutenant, and does nothing but by order from the Governor of *Buenos Ayres*. 'Tis a little place containing 25 Houses, without any Walls, Fortifications, or Garrison, distant 80 Leagues from *Buenos Ayres* Northward, Situate upon the River *de la Plata*, large Vessels might come up to it, were it not for a great bank that obstructs the passage a little above *Buenos Ayres*. Nevertheless 'tis a very advantageous Post, because 'tis the only passage from *Peru*, *Chili* and *Tucuman* to *Paraguay*, and in a manner the Magazine of the Commodities

ties drawn from thence, particularly that Herb already spoken of, which they cannot be without in those Provinces. The Soil is as good and Fertile here as at *Buenos Ayres*; and the Town having nothing remarkably different from what has been observ'd of *Buenos Ayres*, I leave it, and proceed upon my Journey. 'Tis counted 140 Leagues from *Buenos Ayres* to *Cordona*, and because some parts of the Road are uninhabited for a long way together; I furnished my self at my departure with what I was inform'd I should stand in need of; so I set out having a Savage for my Guide, with Three Horses and Three Mules, some to carry my Baggage, and the rest to change upon the way when that I rid upon was tired.

From *Buenos Ayres*, to the River *Lucan*, and even as far as the River *Recife*, 30 Leagues, I pass'd by several Habitations and Farms cultivated by the *Spaniards*, but beyond *Recife* to the River *Salladillo*, I saw none. Let it be observed by the way, that these Rivers as well as all the rest in the Provinces of *Buenos Ayres*, *Paraguay* and *Tucuman*, that fall into the River *de la Plata* are fordable on Horse-back; but when the Rains or  
any

any other accident swells them, a Traveller must either swim over, or else get upon a bundle in the nature of a raft, which a Savage hauls over to the other side. I could not Swim, and so was forc'd to make use of this expedient twice or thrice when I could not find a Ford. The way was this, my *Indian* kill'd a Wild Bull, flead the Hide off, stuffed it with straw, and ty'd it up in a great bundle with thongs of the same Hide, upon which I plac'd my self with my Baggage ; he swam over hawling me after him by a Cord ty'd to the bundle, and then he repass'd and swam my Horses and Mules over to me.

All the Country between the River *Recife* and *Salladillo*, tho' uninhabited, abounds in Cattle and all sorts of Fruit-trees, except Walnut and Chesnut-trees ; there are whole Woods of Nectarine-Trees, Three or Four Leagues in compass, that bear excellent Fruit, which they not only eat raw, but bake them, or dry them in the Sun, to keep, as we in *France* do Prunes : They seldom use any other than the Wood of this Tree for common firing at *Buenos Ayres*, and thereabouts. The Savages that dwell in these Parts are distinguish'd into two sorts, those that  
volun-



voluntarily submit to the Spaniards are call'd *Panpistas*, the rest *Serranos*, both cloathed with Skins, but the last set up-on the *Panpistas* as their mortal Enemies wherever they meet with them. All Fight on Horse-back, either with Lances pointed with Iron or Bones sharpen'd, or else with Bows and Arrows, they wear Bulls-hides fashion'd like a Doublet without sleeves, to defend their Bodies. Their Chiefs that command over them in War and Peace, are call'd *Couracas*. When they take any one of their Enemies, alive or dead, they meet all together, and after they have reproach'd him, that either he or his Relations were the death of their Kindred or Friends, they cut and tear him into pieces, which they roast a little and eat, making a drinking Bowl of his Scull. They feed mostly upon flesh either raw or dress'd, and particularly Colts flesh, which they like better than Veal. They catch abundance of Fish likewise in their Rivers. They have no settled places of aboad, but ramble up and down, several Families together, and live in Tents.

I could not inform my self exactly what Religion they were of, but I was told that they look'd upon the Sun and  
Moon

Moon as Deities, and as I travell'd along, I saw a Savage upon his knees with his Face to the Sun, who cry'd out and made strange gestures with his Hands and Arms. I learn'd from the Savage that accompany'd me, that he was one of those they call'd *Papas*, who in the Morning kneel towards the Sun, and at Night towards the Moon, to supplicate those fancy'd Divinities to be propitious to them, to give them fair Weather, and Victory over their Foes.

They make no great Ceremony in their Marriages; but when a Relation dies, after they have rubb'd his body with a certain Earth that consumes all but the Bones, they preserve them, and carry as many of them as they can conveniently about with them in a sort of Chests, and this they do in token of their affection to their Kindred; indeed they are not wanting in good Offices to them during their Lives, nor in their Sickness and Death.

Along the River *Salladillo*, I took notice of a great many Parrats, or *Papagays*, as the *Spaniards* call them, and certain Birds, call'd *Guacamayos*, which are of divers Colours, and twice or thrice as big as a Parrat. The River it self is  
full

full of the Fish, call'd *Dorado*, which is very good to eat. There is also a Creature in it, whether 'tis Meat or Poyson no body knows, it has Four Feet and a long Tail like a Lizard.

From *Salladillo* quite to *Cordona*, you go along a very fine River, that abounds with Fish, which is neither wide nor deep, for it may be forded over. On the Bank of it you meet with little Plantations every Three or Four Leagues; which are like Country Houses inhabited by *Spaniards*, *Portuguese*, and the Natives, who have all the necessary accommodations of Life they can wish, and are very Civil and Charitable to Strangers; their principal Wealth is in Horses and Mules, in which they Trade with the Inhabitants of *Peru*.

*Cordona* is a Town Situate in a pleasant and fruitful Plain upon the side of a River, bigger and broader than that I have just spoken of: 'Tis compos'd of about 400 Houses, Built like those of *Buenos Ayres*. It has neither Ditches, nor Walls, nor Fort for its defence; He that Commands it is Governor of all the Provinces of *Tucuman*; and tho' it be the place of his ordinary Residence, yet he is wont now and then, as he sees occasion,

caſion, to go and paſs ſome time at *St. Jago de l' Eſtro*, at *St. Miguel de Tucuman*, (which is the Capital City of the Province) at *Salta* and at *Xuxui*. In each of theſe Villages there is a Lieutenant, who has under him an *Alcalde* and ſome Officers for the Adminiſtration of Juſtice. The Biſhop of *Tucuman* likewise uſually reſides at *Cordona*, where the Cathedral is the only Pariſh Church of the whole Town; but there are divers Convents of Monks, namely of *Dominicans*, *Recolleſts*, and thoſe of the Order *de la Mercy*: and one of Nunns. The *Jefuits* have a College there, and their Chappel is the fineſt and richeſt of all.

The Inhabitants are Rich in Gold and Silver, which they get by the Trade they have for Mules, with which they furniſh *Peru* and other Parts; which is ſo conſiderable, that they ſell about 28 or 30000 of 'em every Year, which they breed up in their Farms. They uſually keep 'em till they are about Two Years old, then expoſe 'em to Sale, and have about Six *Patagons* a piece for 'em. The Merchants that come to buy 'em, carry 'em to *St. Jago*, to *Salta* and *Xuxui*, where they leave 'em for Three Years, till they are well grown and become ſtrong,

strong, and afterwards bring 'em to *Peru*, where they presently have Vent for 'em, because there as well as in the rest of the Western part of *America*, the greatest part of their Carriage is upon Mules. The People of *Cordona* also drive a Trade in Cows, which they have from the Countrey of *Buenos Ayres*, and carry to *Peru*, where without this way of Subsistence 'tis certain they would have much ado to live. This kind of Traffick makes this Town the most considerable in the Province of *Tucuman*, as well for its Riches and Commodities, as for the Number of its Inhabitants, which are counted to be at least 5 or 600 Families, besides Slaves who are three times the number. But the generality of 'em of all degrees have no other Arms but a Sword and Poignard, and are very indifferent Souldiers, the Air of the Country, and the Plenty they enjoy, rendring them Lazy and Cowardly.

From *Cordona* I took the way of *St. Jago de l' Estro*, which is 90 Leagues distant from it. In my Journey I from time to time, that is Seven or Eight Leagues, met with single Houses of *Spaniards* and *Portuguese*, who live very solitarily;

litarily ; they are all Situate upon small Rivulets, some of 'em at the Corners of Forrests which are frequently to be met with in that Country, and are almost all of *Algarobe*-wood, the Fruit of which serves to make a Drink that is sweet and sharpish, and heady as Wine ; others of them in open Fields, which are not so well stock'd with Cattle, as those of *Buenos Ayres*, but however there are enough of 'em, and indeed more than needs for the subsistence of the Inhabitants, who also make a Trade of Mules, and Cotton, and Cocheneil for dying, which the Country produces.

*St. Jago de l' Estro* is a Town of about 300 Houses, without Ditches or Walls, Situate in a flat Country, surrounded with Forrests of *Algarobe* ; it lies on an indifferently large River, Navigable for Boats, and pretty well stor'd with Fish. The Air is very hot, and sultry, which makes the Inhabitants lazy and effeminate. Their Faces are all very Tawny ; they are mightily given to their Divertisements, and mind Traffick very little. There are 300 Men that can bear Arms, taking in as well the Savages as Slaves, and they are all ill Arm'd, and but very mean Souldiers.

The

The greatest part of the Women are handsome enough, but have generally a kind of swelling in the Throat, which they call *Coto* in the Language of the Country, and seems to be much the same with what we call a Wen. The Country is sufficiently stor'd with Wild-Fowl, Venison, Wheat, Rye, Barley; and Fruits, as Figgs, Peaches, Apples, Pears, Plumbs, Heart-Cherries, Grapes, &c. There are abundance of Tigers, that are very fierce and ravenous; Lions that are very gentle; and Guanacos that are as big as Horses, with very long Necks, little Heads, and very short Tails, in the Stomachs of these Creatures the *Bezoar-stone* is found. There are Four Churches in this Town, namely the Parish-Church, that of the *Jesuits*, that of the *Recolleſt Friars*, and one more. Here the Inquisitor of the Province of *Tucuman* has his residence; he is a Secular Priest, and has Commissaries or Deputies under him, whom he places in all the other Towns of the Province.

After I had continued Three Days at *St. Jago*, I went from thence to *Salta*, which is 100 Leagues from it, and leaving *St. Miguel* of *Tucuman* on the left hand, which is a Town under the Jurisdiction

diction of *St. Jago*, I took the Road of *Esseco*, finding in my way some little Villages of *Spaniards* here and there, and very few Savages. The Country is flat, and consists partly of Fruitful Plains, and partly of Forrests full of Algarobe and Palm-trees; which bear Dates somewhat less than those in the East-Countries, as well as many other sorts of Trees and Plants, amongst others, those that yield Pitch, and those that produce Cochineil and Cotton. There are divers small Lakes, about which there are great quantities of Salt produc'd, which is us'd by the People of that Country. I stay'd one day at *Essece*, to prepare my self some Provisions to live upon. It's Situation is upon a very handsome broad River, which yet may be foarded on Horseback. This Town was formerly as big and as considerable as *Cordoña*, but is now ruin'd, there being not above 30 Families left in it, for the rest deserted it, because of the great number of Tigers that infested 'em, devouring their Children, and sometimes Men when they could surprize 'em, besides an incredible number of Venemous Flies, that sting very smartly, with which the Country is fill'd for four or five Leagues about the  
the



the Town; so that there's no going abroad without being mask'd. This Country is also sufficiently Fruitful in Wheat, Barley, Vines, and other Fruit-trees; and would abound in Cattle if the Tigers did not devour 'em.

From *Esseco* to *Salta* is 15 Leagues: And this space of Land, would be like that I have just now spoken of, but that it is Gravelly in some places. One may easily discern *Salta* about 2 Leagues before one comes at it; because it stands in the middle of a fine Plain; which is fertile in Corn, Grapes, and other sorts of Fruit, Cattle, and other necessaries of Life: Encompass'd in some places with Hills, and some pretty high Mountains. The Town is upon the bank of a Little River, over which there is a Bridge: It may contain about 400 Houses, and 5 or 6 Churches and Convents, the Structure of which, is like that of those I have before describ'd. 'Tis not encompass'd with any Walls, Fortifications or Ditches; but the Wars the Inhabitants have had with their Neighbours, have train'd them in Martial Discipline, and render'd 'em more careful to have Arms in a readiness than formerly: They are about 500 Men, who

Q 2

all

all bear Arms, besides Slaves, Moulatos, and Blacks, who are three times as many. 'Tis a place of great resort, because of the considerable Trade they have, in Corn, Meal, Cattle, Wine, Salted Meat, Tallow, and other Commodities wherewith they Trade with the Inhabitants of *Peru*.

Twelve Leagues beyond it lies *Xuxui*, which is the last Town of *Tucuman* on the side of *Peru*. There are up and down on the Road a great many Cottages or Farms, and more than in any other place, tho' the Country is not so pleasant nor so fruitful, being almost nothing else but Hills and Mountains. This Town of *Xuxui* contains about 300 Houses: 'Tis not very full of People, because of the continual Wars the Inhabitants of it, as well as those of *Salta*, have with the Savages of the Valley of *Calchaqui*, who are continually harasing of 'em. The Cause that set these Wars on Foot is as follows; The Governor of *Tucuman*, *Don Alonso de Mercado*, and *de Villa Corta*, having receiv'd Information, that the House of the last *Incas* or Kings of *Peru*, which was call'd the White-house, was in this Valley, and that there was a great deal of Treasure there,

there, which the Natives kept as a mark of their Ancient Grandeur, gave advice of it to his Catholick Majesty, and begg'd leave to make a Conquest of it, and subject it to his Government, as it had far'd with so many other places which he obtain'd. To accomplish his design, he thought meet to employ *Don Pedro Bohoriers* a Moor, and Native of *Estramadura*, as being a Person who had been accusom'd to converse with Savage People, and was capable of carrying on Intreagues amongst 'em, and so more fit than another, to make this design succeed; but the business had a quite contrary Event. For this *Bohoriers*, when he was got among the Savages of this Valley, and had gain'd their Affections, instead of acquitting himself of his Commission, endeavor'd to establish himself in Power amongst 'em, in which he succeeded so well, that by his Craft and good address, he brought 'em to choose and acknowledge him for their King; after which he declar'd himself against this *Spanish* Governor, and began a War with him towards the end of 1638, and several times routed him and his Forces, which gave occasion to several of the *Indian* Natives, that were under the Do-

minion of the *Spaniards*, to throw of their Yoke, and joyn with the People of this Valley, who by these additions have render'd themselves somewhat formidable. Hither also the Slaves of *Peru*, particularly those that serve in the Mines, fly, when they can find an opportunity to make their escape: And the safe retreat they find here, draws a great number of 'em to this place; insomuch that the *Spaniards* would not have half Men enough to work in the Mines, if they did not get Negros from *Congo*, *Angola*, and other places on the Coast of *Guinea*, by means of divers *Genoese* that go thither to fetch 'em, and sell 'em to them at a price concerted between 'em.

From *Xuxui* to *Potosi* they count a 100 Leagues, the way is very troublesome, and there is but this one Road to go from *Tucuman* to *Peru*. Two Leagues from *Xuxui* I began to advance to the Mountains, between which there's a little and very narrow Valley, that reaches as far as *Omagoaca*, which is 20 Leagues beyond, and along it there runs a small River, which one is oblig'd to pass and repass very often. Before you are got 4 Leagues in this Road, you meet with *Vulcanos*, or Burning Mountains,

tains, full of Sulphurous matter, which break out in Flames from time to time, and sometimes burst open and throw quantities of Earth into the Valley, which makes the way so dirty when a Rain comes soon after it, as it almost always happens, that sometimes you must be forc'd to stay Five or Six Months, or till the Summer comes to dry it to make it passable. These Vulcanos continue for 2 Leagues upon this Road, and in all this space, there are no Houses either of *Spaniards* or *Savages*, but beyond it all along as far as *Omagoaca*, there are a great many little Cottages, inhabited only by *Indians*, and depending on some Towns of theirs, which are govern'd by their Chiefs, whom they call *Couracas*, who have a *Cacique* over them, whose Orders they obey, and whose residence is at *Omagoaca*, which is a Town of 200 Houses, built of Earth, and standing in no good Order. The Land about it is none of the best, however they sow Wheat there, and a great quantity of Millet, which the *Indians* ordinarily use. As for Cattle, they have very few, and commonly eat Beef dry'd in the Sun, which is brought them by those that Trade with 'em; they have also Goats

and Sheep of their own Product.

The most of these Savages are Catholics, and live according to the Rules of the Roman Catholick Religion; they have a Church at *Omagoaca*, which is supplied with Priests, who go from time to time to celebrate Mass there: These Priests dwell at *Socchoa*, which is the Plantation of *Don Paulo d' Obaudo*, who is a *Spaniard*, but born in this Country, and is Lord Proprietor of it, which contains not only all the Valley of *Omagoaca*, but likewise a great space of Land beyond, and is a Country of about 60 or 80 Leagues in extent, where there are a great many *Vigognes* of whose Wool this Lord makes a very considerable Advantage. He takes these Creatures with a great deal of ease by means of his Subjects the *Indians*, who have no other trouble than that of making a great Inclosure with Nets about a Foot and a half high, to which they tie a great many Feathers that are blown to and fro by the Wind, after which the Savages hunt these Creatures, and drive 'em within the Nets, as they do Wild-Boars in *France* into the Toils; when this is done, some come on Horse-back within the compass of Ground in which they are inclos'd, and  
while

while the poor Beasts dare not go near the Nets for fear of the Feathers that play about 'em, they with certain Bowls fastened to Cords, knock down and kill as many of 'em as they please.

From *Omagoaca* to *Mayo*, they count it 30 Leagues, & there's nothing to be met with along this way, but a very few Plantations of Savages, because 'tis so very Cold here in the Winter, that 'tis hard to be endur'd.

The way from *Mayo* to *Toropalca* is through very pleasant Plains, there are Two hundred Houses in the Town, inhabited by Catholick Savages, only one *Portuguese* lives there with his Family.

Beyond *Toropalca*, is the Country of *Chichas* which is very Mountainous, and is stor'd with divers Mines of Gold and Silver, and Work-houses where they prepare the Metal. 'Tis 25 Leagues in extent as far as *Potosi*, where I arriv'd after a Journey of Sixty three Days.

---

*A Description of the City of Potosi,  
and the Mines there.*

I Was no sooner alighted from my Horse, at a Merchants House to whom I had been recommended, but I was conducted by him to the President of the Provinces of *Los Charcas*, to whom the Order I carried from the King of *Spain* was directed, as the Principal Director of his Catholick Majesty's Affairs in this Province, in which *Potosi* is Situate, which is the place of his Ordinary Residence, altho' the *City de la Plata* is the Capital. After I had deliver'd the Order to him, I was brought to the Corregidor, to deliver that which belong'd to him, and afterwards to those other Officers for whom I brought Orders; they all receiv'd me very well, particularly the President, who presented me with a Chain of Gold for the good News I had brought him.

But before we go any farther 'tis convenient I should give some description of the City of *Potosi*, as I have done of others,



others. The *Spaniards* call it the Imperial City, but no body could ever tell me for what reason; 'tis Situate at the Foot of a Mountain, call'd *Arazassou*, and divided in the midst by a River, which comes from a Lake inclos'd with Walls, which lies about a quarter of a League above the City, and is a kind of reserver to hold the Water that is necessary for the Work-houses of that part of the City, which is on this side of the River, over against the Mountain, is rais'd upon a little Hill, and is the largest and most inhabited part; for on that which is on the side of the Mountain, there's scarce any thing but Engines and the Houses of those that Work in 'em. The City has neither Walls, Ditches, nor Forts for its defence, there are reckon'd to be 4000 Houses well built of good Stone, with several Floors, after the manner of the Buildings in *Spain*. The Churches are well made, and all richly adorn'd with Plate, Tapestry, and other Ornaments, and above all those of the Monks and Nunns, of whom there are several Convents of different Orders, which are very well furnish'd. This is not the least populous City of *Peru*, with *Spaniards*, *Mestices*,  
Stran-

*Strangers*, and *Natives* (which last the *Spaniards* call *Indios*) with *Moulatos* and *Negroes*. They count there are between 3 and 4000 Natural *Spaniards* bearing Arms, who have the Reputation of being very stout Men and good Souldiers. The number of the *Mestices* is not much less, nor are they less expert at a Weapon, but the greatest part of 'em, are Idle, apt to quarrel and Treacherous, therefore they commonly wear Three or Four Buff-waist-coats one upon another, which are proof against the point of a Sword, to secure themselves from private stabs. The *Strangers* there are but few, there are some *Dutch*, *Irish*, and *Genoese*; and some *French*, most of whom are of *St. Malo*, *Provence* or *Bayonne*, and pass for People of *Navarre* and *Biscaye*. As for the *Indians* they are reckon'd to amount to near 10000 besides the *Moulatos* and the *Blacks*: but they are not permitted to wear either Swords or Fire-Arms, no not their *Cou-racas* and *Caciques*, tho' they may all aspire to any degree of Knight-hood, and to Benefices, to which they are often rais'd, for their laudable Actions, and good Services. They are also forbidden to wear the *Spanish* habit, but are

are oblig'd to cloath themselves in a different manner, in a close-coat without sleeves, which they wear next their Shirts, to which their Band and lac'd Cuffs are fasten'd, their Breeches are wide at bottom after the *French* fashion; their Legs and Feet naked. The *Blacks* and *Moulatos* being in the Service of the *Spaniards*, are habited after the *Spanish* Mode, and may bear Arms, and all the *Indian* Slaves after Ten Years service are set at liberty, and have the same privileges with the others. The Government of this City is very exact, by the Care which is taken by Twenty four Magistrates, who are constantly observing, that good orders be kept in it; besides the Corregidor and President of *Los Charcas*, who directs Officers after the manner of *Spain*. It is to be observ'd, that excepting these two Principal Officers, as well at *Potosi* as every where else in the *Indies*, all the People, whether Knights, Gentlemen, Officers or others, are concern'd in Commerce: of which some of them make so great an advantage, that in the City of *Potosi*, there are some reckon'd to be worth, Two, some Three, and some Four Millions of Crowns; and a great many worth Two, Three,

Three, or Four hundred thousand Crowns. The common People to live much at their ease, but are all proud and haughty, and always go very fine, either in Cloth of Gold and Silver, or in Scarlet, or Silk trimmed with a great deal of Gold and Silver-Lace. The Furniture of their Houses is very Rich, for they are generally serv'd in Plate. The Wives both of Gentlemen and Citizens, are kept very close, to a degree beyond what they are in *Spain*; they never go abroad, unless it be to go to Mass, or to make some Visit, or to some publick Feast; and that but rarely. The Women here are generally addicted to excess in taking Coca: This is a Plant that comes from the side of *Cusco*, which when it is made up in Rows and dry'd they chew, as some do Tobacco; they are so heated, and sometimes absolutely fuddled by it, that they have no command of themselves at all: 'Tis likewise often us'd by the Men, and has the same effects upon them. They are otherwise very Temperate in eating and drinking, tho' they have before dwelt in places well stor'd with all sort of Provisions, as Beef, Mutton, Fowls, Venison, raw and preserv'd Fruits, Corn and Wine, which

which are brought hither from other parts, and some from a great distance, which makes these Commodities dear, so that the meaner sort of People; especially those that have very little before-hand, would find it hard enough to live there, if Money were not very plenty, and easie to be got by them that are willing to work.

The best and finest Silver in all the *Indies*, is that of the Mines of *Potosi*, the principal of which are found in the Mountain of *Aranzasse*, where besides the prodigious quantities of Silver that have been taken out of Veins, in which the Metall evidently appear'd, and which are now exhausted, there is almost as great quantities of it found in places where they had not digg'd before; nay from some of the Earth which they threw aside formerly when they open'd the Mines, and made Pits, and Cross-ways in the Mountains, they have taken Silver, and have found by this, that the Silver has been form'd since that time, which shews how proper the Quality of this Ground is for the production of that Metal: But indeed this Earth does not yield so much as the Mines that are found by Veins among the Rocks. There are besides  
these

these another sort of Veins of Earth which they call *Paillaco*, which are as hard as a Stone, and of the Colour of Clay, which were slighted heretofore, and yet as Experience has since taught, were not so contemptable as was suppos'd; since Silver is got out of 'em with so little Charge, that there is no inconsiderable profit found in the Work. Besides the Mines of this Mountain, there are a great many others about the Country at a greater distance, that are pretty good, amongst others those of *Lippes*, of *Carangas*, and of *Porco*; but those of *Ourores* that have been lately discover'd are better.

The King of *Spain* does not cause any of these Mines to be wrought on his own account, but leaves 'em to those Persons that make the Discovery of 'em, who remain Masters of 'em after the Corregidor has visited 'em, and declar'd 'em Proprietors, on the accustom'd Conditions and Privileges. The same Corregidor describes and marks out the superficies of the Ground, in which they are allow'd to open the Mine on the outside, which does not for all that, limit or restrain their work under-ground; every Man having liberty to follow the  
Vein

Vein he has found, let the extent and depth of it reach never so far, tho' it should cross that which another has digged near it. All that the King reserves for himself, besides the Duties we shall hereafter speak of, is to give a general direction by his Officers, for all the work of the Mines, and to order the number of Savages to be employ'd in 'em; to prevent the disorders that would arise, if every Proprietor of the Mines should have liberty to set as many of 'em to work as he pleas'd; which would frequently give occasion to those that are most powerful and Rich, to ingross and have so great a Number of 'em, that few or none would remain for others to employ, to keep their work going forward: for this would be contrary to the Kings Interest, which is to make Provision that that there be a sufficient number of Slaves for all the Mines that are open'd. For this end he obliges all the *Couracas* or Chiefs of the Savages, to furnish every one a certain number, which they must always keep compleat, or else are forc'd to give twice as much Money as would have been paid in Wages to those that are wanting, if they had been present. Those that are destin'd for the Mines of

R. *Potosi,*

*Potosi*, don't amount to above Two thousand and two or three hundred, these are brought and put into a great Enclosure which is at the Foot of the Mountain, where the Corregidor makes a distribution of 'em to the Conductors of the Mines, according to the Number they want, and after Six days constant Work, the Conductor brings 'em back the Saturday following to the same place, where the Corregidor causes a review to be made of 'em, to make the owners of the Mines give 'em the Wages that are appointed 'em, and to see how many of 'em are dead, that the *Couracas* may be oblig'd to supply the number that is Wanting: for there's no Week passes but some of 'em die, either by divers accidents that Occur, as the tumbling down of great quantities of Earth, and falling of Stones, or by Sickness and other Casualties. They are sometimes very much incommoded by Winds that are shut up in the Mines; the coldness of which joyn'd to that of some parts of the Earth, chills 'em so excessively, that unless they chew'd *Coca*, which heats and fuddles 'em, it would be intolerable to 'em. Another great hardship which they suffer is, that in other places, the Sulphurous and  
Mineral



Mineral Vapours are are so great, that it strangely drys 'em up, so that it hinders 'em from free respiration; and for this they have no other remedy, than the Drink which is made with the Herb of *Paraguay*, of which they prepare a great quantity to refresh and moisten 'em, when they come out of the Mines at the times appointed for eating or sleeping; this Drink serves 'em also for Physick to make 'em Vomit, and cast up whatever incommodes their Stomachs. Among these Savages they ordinarily choose the best Workmen to break up the Oar between the Rocks; this they do with Iron-barrs, which the *Spaniards* call *Palancas*, and other Instruments of Iron; others serve to carry what they digg in little Baskets to the entrance of the Mine; others to put it in Sacks, and load it upon a sort of great Sheep, which they call *Carneros de la Tierra*, they are taller than Asses, and commonly carry Two hundred Pound weight; these serve to carry it to the Work-houses which are in the Town along the River, which comes from the Lake I have spoken of before. In these Work-houses which are a Hundred and twenty in Number; the Oar is refined, of which take the follow-

R 2

ing

ing account. They first beat it well upon Anvils with certain great Hammers, which a Mill continually keeps at work, when they are pretty well reduc'd to Powder, they pass it thro' a fine Sieve, and spread it upon the Ground about half a Foot thick in a square place that is very smooth, prepar'd for the purpose; then they cast a great deal of Water upon it, after which they with a Sieve spread upon it a certain quantity of Quick-silver, which is proportion'd by the Officers of the Mint, and also a Liquid substance of Iron, which is prepar'd by Two Millstones, one of which is fix'd, and the other is continually turning, between these they put an Old Anvil, or some other Massy piece of Iron, which is worn away and Consum'd with Water by the turning Millstone, so that 'tis reduc'd to a certain Liquid Matter. The Oar being thus prepar'd, they stir it about and mix it, as Men do when they make Mortar, for a Fortnight together, every day tempering it with Water; and after this they several times put it into a Tub, wherein there is a little Mill, which by its motion separates from it all the Earth with the Water, and casts 'em off together,  
so

so that nothing but the Metallick Matter remains at the bottom, which is afterwards put into the Fire in Crucibles, to separate the Quick-silver from it, which is done by Evaporation, for as for the Iron substance, that does not Evaporate, but remains mix'd with the Silver, which is the reason that there is always in Eight Ounces (for example sake) Three quarters of an Ounce or thereabouts of false Alloy.

The Silver when thus refin'd is carried to the Mint, where they make an Essay of it whether it be of the right Alloy, after which it is melted into Barrs or Ingots, which are weigh'd, and the fifth part of 'em deducted, which belongs to the King, and are stamp'd with his mark; the rest appertain to the Merchant, who in like manner applies his mark to them; and takes 'em away from thence when he pleases in Barrs, or else converts 'em into Reals and other Money. This fifth part is the only profit the King has from the Mines, which yet are esteem'd to amount to several Millions; But besides this, he draws considerable Sums by the ordinary Impositions upon Goods, without reckoning what he raises upon Quick-silver, both that which

is taken out of the Mines of *Guancavelica*, which are Situated between *Lima* and *Cusco*; and that which is brought from *Spain*, with which Two Vessels are loaded every Year, because that which is taken out of these Mines is not sufficient for all the *Indies*.

They use divers ways of Carriage, to Transport all the Silver that is annually made about *Potosi* for *Spain*; first they Load it upon Mules, that carry it to *Arica*, which is a Port on the South-Sea, from whence they Transport it in small Vessels to the Fort of *Lima*, or *Los Reys*, which is a Fort upon the same Sea, Two Leagues from *Lima*; here they Embark it with all that comes from other parts of *Peru*, in Two great Gallions that belong to his Catholick Majesty, each of which carry 1000 Tuns, and are Arm'd each with 50 or 60 Pieces of Canon; these are commonly accompanied with a great many small Merchant Ships as Richly Loaded, which have no Guns but a few Petareroes to give Salutes; and take their Course towards *Panama*, taking care always to send a little Pinnace 8 or 10 Leagues before to make discoveries. They might make this way in a Fortnights time, having always

ways the help of the South-wind which reigns alone in this Sea ; yet they never make it less than a Months Voyage, because by this delay the Commander of the Gallions makes a great advantage in furnishing those with Cards that have a mind to play on Ship-board, during the Voyage, which amounts to a very considerable Sum, both because the Tribute he receives is Ten Patagons for every Pack of Cards, and because there is a prodigious quantity of 'em consum'd, they being continually at play ; and there being scarce any body aboard, but is concern'd for very considerable Sums. When the Gallions arrive at *Panama* on the Continent, they put their Lading ashoar, and wait to hear of those from *Spain*, who commonly about the same time, or a little after, arrive at *Portobelo*, which is 18 Leagues from the North-Sea ; in the mean time they carry thither part of the Gold, Silver, and other Commodities of this Fleet which are design'd for *Europe*, upon Mules by Land, and part by Water upon the River of *Chiagre*, in Boats made of an entire piece of Wood call'd *Piragouas*. A few days after they are unladen, and after the Gallions are likewise arriv'd from *Spain* ; a

very great Fair is held there, for a Fort-night together, in which they Sell and Barter all sorts of Goods necessary for each Country; which is perform'd with so much honesty, that the Sale is made only by the Inventories, without opening the Bales, without the least Fraud. The Fair being ended, they all retire to the places to which they respectively belong. The Gallions that are to return into *Spain*, go to *Havana*, in the Island of *Cuba*, where they wait for the Arrival of the Flota of *la Vera-Cruz* in *New Spain*; as soon as that has joyn'd 'em, they continue their Course together, passing thro' the Channel of *Babama* along the Coast of *Florida*, they touch at the Island of *Bermudos*, where they commonly meet with Advice of the State of Affairs in *Europe*, and with orders to direct them how to avoid any disasters, and to perform their Voyage in safety. As for the Gallions of *Peru*, after they have taken in a new Cargo at *Panama*, they return to *Lima*, steering divers Courses, because of the Contrariety of the Wind, which keeps 'em Two or Three Months at Sea. Being there, they dispose of what they have for *Peru*: And the rest of the Goods is taken off by the Merchants

chants of *Chili*, who give a great many Commodities of their Country in exchange for 'em; as Goats-leather, which in the Language of the Country is call'd *Cordouan*, Cordage, Hemp, Pitch and Tar, Oyls, Olives, and Almonds, and above all a great quantity of Dust of Gold, which is taken out of the Rivers of *Copiapo*, *Coquinbo*, *Baldivia*, and others which fall into the South-Sea. And now we are speaking of the Commodities of *Chili*, some small matter must be said concerning this great Province or Kingdom. At the Mouths of those Rivers, of which I have just been speaking, there are good Ports, and Cities, each of which consist of about 4 or 500 Houses, and those sufficiently stock'd with People. The most considerable Cities upon the Sea-Coast, are *Baldivia*, *la Conception*, *Copiapo* and *Coquinbo*. *Baldivia* is Fortified, and has a Garrison in it, usually compos'd only of Banish'd Men, and Malefactors of the *Indies*; the Three others are Cities of Trade. Farther up in the Countrey is *St. Jago de Chili*, which is the Capital of all *Chili*, where there is likewise a strong Garrison, and some regular Troops, by reason of the continual War they have with the Savages

vages, call'd *Aoucans*. Beyond it in the Mountains, lies the little Province of *Chicuito*, of which the principal Places are *St. Juan de la Frontera*, and *Mendoca*, round about these Towns, there grows a great deal of Corn, and abundance of Vines, which furnish the Country of *Chili*, and the Province of *Tucuman* as far as *Buenos Ayres*.

Three Weeks after my Arrival at *Potosi*; there were great rejoycings made for the Birth of the Prince of *Spain*, which lasted for a Fortnight together, during which time all Work ceased, throughout the City, in the Mines, and in the Adjacent places, and all the People great and small, whether *Spaniards*, *Forreigners*, *Indians*, or *Blacks*, minded nothing else but to do something extraordinary for the Solemnizing of this Festival. It began with a Cavalcade, made by the Corregidor, the Twenty four Magistrates of the City, the other Officers, the Principal of the Nobility and Gentry, and the most eminent Merchants of the City; all richly Cloth'd. All the rest of the People, and particularly the Ladies being at the Windows, and casting down abundance of perfum'd Waters, and great quantities of  
dry



dry Sweet-meats. The following days they had several Plays, some of which they call *Juegos de Toros*, others *Juegos de Cannas*, several sorts of Masquerades, Comedies, Balls, with Vocal and Instrumental Musick, and other Divertisements, which were carry'd on one day by the Gentlemen, another day by the Citizens; one while by the Gold-smiths, another while by the Miners; some by the People of divers Nations, others by the *Indians*, and all with great Magnificence, and a prodigious Expence. The Rejoycings of the *Indians* deserve a particular remark, for besides that they were richly cloth'd, and after a different manner, and that Comical enough; with their Bows and Arrows; they in one Night and Morning, in the Chief Publick place of the City, prepar'd a Garden in the form of a Labyrinth, the Plats of which were adorn'd with Fountains spouting out Waters, furnished with all sorts of Trees and Flowers, full of Birds, and all sorts of Wild-beasts, as Lions, Tygers and other kinds; in the midst of which they express'd their Joy a Thousand different ways, with extraordinary Ceremonies. The last day save one surpass'd all the rest, and that was

was a Race at the Ring, which was perform'd at the Charge of the City with very surprizing Machines. First there appear'd a Ship Tow'd along by Savages, of the bulk and burden of a 100 Tuns, with her Guns and Equipage of Men cloth'd in Curious Habit, her Anchors, Ropes, and Sails swelling with the Wind, which very luckily blew along the Street through which they drew her to the great publick place, where as soon as she arriv'd, she saluted the Company, by the discharge of all her Canon; and at the same time a *Spanish* Lord, representing an Emperor of the *East*, coming to Congratulate the Birth of the Prince, came out of the Vessel attended with Six Gentlemen, and a very fine Train of Servants that led their Horses, which they mounted, and so went to salute the President of *Los Charcas*, and while they were making their Compliment to him, their Horses kneel'd down, and kept in that Posture, having been taught this Trick before. They afterwards went to salute the Corregidor, and the Judges of the Field, from whom when they had receiv'd permission to run at the Ring against the Defendants, they acquitted themselves with

with great Gallantry, and receiv'd very fine prizes distributed by the hands of the Ladies. The Race at the Ring being finish'd, the Ship and a great many other small Barks that were brought thither advanc'd to attack a great Castle wherein *Cromwel* the Protector, who was then in War with the King of *Spain*, was feign'd to be shut up; and after a pretty long Combat of Fireworks; the fire took hold of the Ship, the small Barks, and the Castle and all was consum'd together. After this a great many pieces of Gold and Silver were distributed and thrown among the People in the Name of his Catholick Majesty: And there were some particular Persons that had the prodigality to throw away Two or Three Thousand Crowns a Man among the Mob. The Day following these Rejoycings were concluded by a Procession, made from the great Church to that of the Recollects, in which the Holy Sacrament was carry'd, attended with all the Clergy and Laity; and because the way from one of these Churches to the other had been unpav'd for the Celebration of the other Rejoycings, they repair'd it for this Procession with Barrs of Silver, with

with which all the way was entirely cover'd. The Altar where the Host was to be Lodg'd in the Church of the Recollects was so furnish'd with Figures, Vessels, and Plates of Gold and Silver, adorn'd with Pearles, Diamonds, and other Precious Stones, that scarce ever could any thing be seen more Rich: For the Citizens brought thither all the rarest Jewels they had. The extraordinary Charge of this whole time of Rejoycing, was reckon'd to amount to above 500000 Crowns.

These Divertisements being ended, the rest of the time that I continued at *Potosi*, was employ'd in compleating the Sale of the Goods, the Inventories of which I had brought with me, and I oblig'd myself to cause these Goods to be deliver'd in a certain time at *Xuxui*, and to pay all the Charge of Carriage so far. I took most of my Payment in Silver, namely in Patagons, Plate, Barrs, and Pignas, which is Virgin-silver; and the rest in *Vigogne* Wool, and when I had quite finish'd the business for which I was sent to *Potosi*; I left the place to return to *Buenos Ayres* the same way I came. I loaded all my Bales upon Mules, which is the ordinary way of Carriage

to pass the Mountains which divide *Peru* from *Tucuman*. But when I was arriv'd at *Xuxui*, I thought meet to make use of Waggon, which is much more Commodious, and thus I continu'd my Travels; and after a Journey of 4 Months happily arriv'd at the River of *Lucan*; which is 5 Leagues from *Buenos Ayres*; where I met with *Ignatio Maleo*, who was got thither before me; he came thither by the River in a little Boat, which we resolv'd to make use of, to convey most of the Silver I had brought with me, by way to our Ship; we thought meet to take this Course to avoid the risque we must have run of being Confiscated, if we had brought our Vessel by *Buenos Ayres*, because of the Prohibition of the Exportation of Gold and Silver, tho' this order is not always very regularly observ'd, the Governour sometimes, suffering it to be carried out privately, Conniving at it, for some present, or else not being very strict in taking notice of it.

I must not omit here to tell the reason why the *Spaniards* will not suffer the Silver of *Peru*, and of other Neighbouring Provinces to be Transported by the River of *la Plata*, nor all sorts of Vessels to go  
and

and Trade there without Permission: It is from this Consideration, that if they should give way to a free Trade on that side, where the Country is good and Plentiful, the Earth Fruitful, The Air wholesome, and Carriage Commodious; the Merchants that Trade in *Peru*, *Chili*, and *Tucuman*, would soon quit the way of the Gallions, and the Ordinary Passages through the North and South-Seas, and through the Continent, which is difficult and Incommodious; and would take the way of *Buenos Ayres*: And this would infallibly cause most of the Cities of the Continent to be deserted, where the Air is bad, and the Necessaries and Accommodations of Life are not to be had in such plenty.

When we had secur'd our Silver by the precaution we had us'd, I came to *Buenos Ayres* with the rest of our Goods; where I was no sooner Arriv'd, but our return to *Spain* was resolv'd on. But least any thing should be found on board us to give occasion for any Seizure, when the Kings Officers should make their usual Visit on our Vessel, before it went out of the Port; we thought convenient at first to Embark only those Commodities  
that

that took up the most room, as *Vigogne* Wool, Leather of several sorts, amongst others 16000 Bulls-hides, with a great many other Bales and Chests belonging to the Passengers that were to return with us, and about 30000 Crowns in Silver, which is the largest Sum that is permitted to be carried away, to supply all necessary charges that may occur in the Voyage, and to pay off the Ship. But after this Visit was made, we made an end of Embarking the Silver we had hidden, which with the rest of the Lading might amount to about Three Millions of Livers.

We parted from *Buenos Ayres* in the Month of *May* 1659, in company of a *Dutch* Vessel, Commanded by *Isaac de Brac*, which was also richly Laden; he engag'd us to steer our Course with him, because his Ship leak'd; and this fault increasing in the sequel of the Voyage, we were oblig'd to put in at the Island of *Fernande de Lorona*, within 3 Degrees and a half of the Line on the South-side. It prov'd well for us, as well as for the *Dutch*, that we stop'd here. For having a mind for fear of the worst to take in a new Provision of Fresh-Water here, we perceiv'd the greatest part of that we had taken in at *Buenos Ayres* was run out, and of a Hundred Barrels, which we thought we had remaining of our Store; we had but

S                      Thirty

Thirty left. Therefore tho' the Water we found there had a very flat Taste, and had this ill quality, that it presently cast them that drank of it into a Looseness, we were however necessitated to fill our Barrels with it. And an Accident unhappy enough befell those of our Men that went to fetch it from the Rock out of which it sprang, for having stripp'd themselves almost naked, to work the more commodiously, the heat of the Sun scorch'd 'em so vehemently, that it made their Bodies all over red, and afterwards those parts upon which the Sun darted its Rays with the greatest violence, were full of Bubes and Pustules, which were very troublesome, and made 'em very uneasy for a Fortnights Time.

I went ashore to see this Island, which is about a League and an half in compass, and uninhabited. One of our Pilots told me that the *Dutch* possess'd it, while they held *Fermanbues* in *Brasil*, and that they had a small Fort there, some small remains of which were still left, that they sow'd Millet and Beans there, of which they had a tolerable Crop, and that they bred up a great many Fowls, Goats and Hogs. We saw a great number of Birds, of which some were good to eat; we continu'd there Four days, but when we saw the *Dutch* could not be so soon in a condition to continue



tinue their Voyage, being oblig'd to put their Cargo ashore, and to lay their Vessel upon one side to refit; we set sail, and after a Voyage sufficiently troublesome by the Storms we suffer'd, which sometimes drove us towards the Coasts of *Florida*, and sometimes upon others, we at last discover'd the Coasts of *Spain*. Instead of going to *Cadiz*, being under apprehensions of meeting the *English* who were still at War with the *Spaniards*; we thought convenient to make to *St. Andero*, where we happily arriv'd about the middle of *August*. We were immediatly inform'd that the *Spanish* Gallions came to Moor at the same Port in their return from *Mexico*, for the same reason that brought us thither, and that they set Sail but Two days before our Arrival. And because the Officers of the King of *Spain*, that had been sent to 'em were still there, we thought best to treat with them, as well to save the Fine we had incurr'd, for not returning to the place from whence we were sent out, as that we might not be troubled with a visit from them. And for 4000 *Patagons*, which we presented 'em, we were excus'd and exempted from any search. We therefore put our Silver and other Commodities ashore there, part of which was afterwards sent to *Bilboa*, and part to *St. Sebastian*, where in a little time they were sold

and distributed to several Merchants, who Transported 'em to divers places to put 'em off. When we had finished the Sale of all our Commodities, there was an exact account stated among those that were concern'd in the Ship, both of their Charge and Profit of this Voyage ; about the detail of which I shall not trouble my head. I shall only say, to give a short account of it in Gross, that the Charge consisted first in 290000 Crowns employ'd in buying the Goods with which our Vessel was Loaded at *Cadiz*, and in paying the Dues of Exportation from *Spain*. 74000 *Livers* for the Freight of the Vessel for 19 Months, at the rate of 3200 *Livers* per Month, 43000 *Livers* more for the pay of 76 Seamen great and small for the time, at the rate of 10 Crowns per Month one with another. 30000 Crowns spent in Victualling the Ship for that time, as well for the Ships Crew as for the Passengers, there being a very good Provision made, because in those long Voyages beyond the Line the Sailers must have good Sustenance, and the Passengers must have a great many Sweet-meats, good Liquors, and other Costly things. More 2000 Crowns for the Dues of Entry at *Buenos Ayres*, and in Presents to the Officers of the Place ; and 1000 Crowns in Custom at our going from thence ; more in Expences, Imposts and Charges

Charges in carrying our Goods from *Buenos Ayres* to *Potosi*, and from *Potosi* to *Buenos Ayres*, at the rate of 20 Crowns for a Quintal or 100 weight; more 4000 Crowns to procure an Exemption from being search'd and visited at our return to *Spain*. And in fine some other Expences, as well in Customs of Entry, when we Landed our Goods in *Spain*, as in some other things not fore-seen, which did not amount to any great Sums. These were almost all the Principal Articles of the Charge, which being deducted and paid, the Profit was found to amount to 250 *per Cent*. Comprehending that which was got by the Hides, which came to 15 *Livers* a piece, that being the Ordinary Price, tho' they cost but a Crown at the first hand; and likewise what was got by the Passengers, of whom we had above 50 on board us, as well in going as coming, which was not inconsiderable; for one Man who had nothing but his Chest paid 800 Crowns, and the rest paid proportionably for their Passage and Diet.

We were told at *St. Andero*, that the *Dutch* Vessels which we had seen at *Buenos Ayres* were safely arriv'd at *Amsterdam*, but that the *Spanish* Embassador being inform'd that they came from the *River de la Plata*, and had brought thence a prodigious Quantity of Silver and other Commodities, as well

on the account of some *Dutch* Merchants, as for several *Spaniards*, who had taken the opportunity of the return of these Vessels to come back into *Europe*, and had remitted their Money from *Amsterdam* to *Cadiz* and *Sevil* by Bills of Exchange, besides the *Dutch* Goods which they sent thither, had given advice of it to the Council for the *Indies* at *Madrid*, who judged this Money and these Effects liable to Confiscation, because all *Spaniards* are Prohibited from Trading upon Forreign Vessels, and from Transporting Silver to any other place besides *Spain*; and accordingly had seiz'd and confiscated the greatest part of 'em, the rest being saved by the precautions some of the Merchants took, who were not so much in haste as the others. The same Embassador having remonstrated at the same time, what would be the Consequence of Tolerating Strangers to continue to trade in the River of *Plata*, without putting any restraint upon 'em, the Council had so much regard to his advice, as to Equip a Vessel with all speed at *St. Sebastian*, which they Loaded with Arms and Men, to send to *Buenos Ayres* with very strict orders, as well to seize the Person of the Governor for having suffer'd these *Dutch* Vessels to come and Trade in the Country, as to take an exact account of the Acquaintance and Intelligence the

*Dutch*

*Dutch* had gotten there, as also to reestablish things so well there, in fortifying the Garrisons, and in Arming them better than they had yet been in time past, that for the Future they might be in a condition to resist Forreigners, and to hinder their Descent and Communication in the Country. Soon after our Arrival, *Ignatio Maleo* the Captain of our Ship, receiv'd an Order from the Court of *Spain* to come to *Madrid*, to inform the Council for the *Indies* of the Condition in which he found and left things at *Buenos Ayres*: He was desirous that I would accompany him thither, which I did. As soon as we arriv'd at *Madrid*, he gave in the Memoires, not only of all he had observ'd in the River of *Plata*, but also of the means that might be us'd to hinder Strangers from having the least thoughts of Trading there, and that first by keeping Two good Men of War at the Mouth of the River, to dispute and hinder the Passage of such Merchant Ships as should attempt to go up to *Buenos Ayres*; in the second place by sending every Year Two Ships Loaded with all things the People of those parts have occasion for. That being this way sufficiently supply'd, they might have no thoughts of favouring the descent and entrance of Strangers, when they should come thither. He moreover made a propo-

sal of changing the usual Way of carrying Goods, which are sent to *Peru*, and brought them by the Way of the Gallions ; that it might be settled on the River of *Plata*, from whence he assur'd 'em, the Carriage of 'em by Land to *Peru*, would be more conveniently perform'd, and at a cheaper Rate, as well as with less Risque, than any other Way. But of all these Proposals the Council of *Spain* relish'd only that of sending to *Buenos-Ayres* Two Vessels laden with Commodities proper for the Country. And *Maleo* having obtain'd a Grant, and a Commission for this Purpose, upon the Assurance of it, we return'd to *Guipuscoa*, to make Preparation for this Voyage, and to set our Affairs in order ; which we so well dispatch'd, that in a little time, we had a Vessel ready to set sail, which *Maleo* order'd to be bought at *Amsterdam*, and to be brought to the Port from whence we were to go, being partly laden with *Dutch*, and with other Commodities, taken up at *Bayonne*, *St. Sebastian*, and *Bilboa*, bought in gross at a Venture, in which Affair I was employ'd, having undertaken it by *Maleo's* Commission.

During these Preparations, and while we waited for the Dispatch of the Grant, that had been promis'd him by the Council of *Spain*, it happen'd that the Baron of *Va-*  
teville

teville being in haste to go into *England*, in Quality of Ambassador from his Catholick Majesty ; and having Orders to make use of the first Ship that was ready to Sail, took *Maleo's* Vessel ; which, yet serv'd only to carry his Baggage, the King of Great Britain having sent him a Frigat at the same time, in which he cross'd the Sea. During the Stay, which *Maleo* was oblig'd to make in *England*, he made new Provision for his Voyage to the *Indies* ; and seeing his Grant was not yet sent him, he thought it expedient to take a Commission, from the Baron of *Vateville*, as Captain-General of the Province of *Guipuscoa*, in my Name, and that of *Pascoal Hiriarte*, commanding his Ship to go in pursuit of the *Portuguese*, on the Coast of *Brezil* ; that this might serve us for a Pretext, to go into the River of *Plata*. Being fortified with this Order, we embark'd, and having stopp'd at *Havre de Grace* to set *N----* ashoar, who thought good to return to *Madrid*, to sollicite a Commission also from the Council of *Spain*, for the Two Vessels, with which we agreed, that they should come and joyn us at *Buenos-Ayres* ; we continued our Course, and after many cross Winds, we arriv'd in the River of *Plata* : As we enter'd into it, we met Two *Dutch* Vessels that came from *Buenos Ayres* ; the Captains of which inform'd

us, that one of 'em could by no means obtain leave to Trade there; but that the other Arriving there before him, in a conjuncture when the Government was oblig'd to send a very important Message in all haste to his Catholick Majesty, relating to his Service, was so happy, by the promise he made of taking the Courier, who was order'd for *Spain* on board him, as to find means of disposing of all his Goods, and of bringing away a very Rich Cargo, in which he spake the very Truth; for he had the prudence before he came to the Port, to take out his richest Goods, and leave 'em in an Island below, and only reserv'd those of the greatest bulk to be expos'd to the View of the Officers, of which he had made a false Envois at the price of the Country, separate from the general one, and had made the Value of his Cargo to amount to 270000 Crowns. He agreed with the Governor to leave these Goods with him, provided he would give him for 'em 22000 Hides at a Crown apiece, 12000 pound of *Vigogne* Wool at 4 *Livers* 10 *Sous* per Pound, and 30000 Crowns in Silver to pay the Charges of Equipping his Ship; which was perform'd accordingly. But under the pretence of his Bargain, and while the Leather was Loading in the Vessel, the Captain under-hand sold his Richest Commodities,



dities, and for the Value of 'em which amounted to 100000 Crowns, he got at least 400000. Thus the Captain of the Ship and the Governor both made a great Advantage; but this Governor whose Name is *Don Alonza de Mercado and de Villacorta*, being a very disinterested Man, and not at all greedy of Money, declar'd that the Profit of this business was for the King his Master, and gave him advice of it by this Courrier.

Being separated from these Vessels, we came to an Anchor before *Buenos Ayres*; but for all the Instances and Offers we could make one time after another to this Governor, we could never obtain his Permission to put our Goods ashore, and to expose 'em to Sale to the People of the Place; because we had no Licence for it from *Spain*. He only consented to let us go into the City from time to time to procure Victuals for our Men, and such other Necessaries as we wanted. He treated us with this Rigour for Eleven Months, after which there happen'd an Occasion which oblig'd him to use us better, and to enter into a sort of an Accommodation with us. There was another *Spanish* Ship in the Port, the same that a Year before had brought Troops and Arms from *Spain*, to reinforce the Garisons of *Buenos Ayres*, and of *Chili*, of which I have

have spoken above; which contin'd here all this time upon her own private business, but the Captain that Commanded her could not manage his Affairs with so much secrecy, but it came to the Governor's Ear, that he design'd in prejudice of the Prohibition that was made, to carry away a great quantity of Silver, and indeed he seiz'd on a Sum of 113000 Crowns that was just ready to be carry'd of, of which the Captain could have no restitution made; and fearing a greater disapointment, namely that he should be seiz'd, he set Sail to return into *Spain*, without waiting for any Letters for his Catholick Majesty, with which the Governor would have intrusted him, together with the Information he had receiv'd of the Intelligence the *Dutch* had gotten in the Country, which he had a mind to send into *Spain* with all speed, as well as some Persons whom he had seiz'd, that were guilty of holding this Correspondence with the *Dutch*, among whom there was a Captain, nam'd *Alberto Janson*, a *Dutch*-man. The flight of this *Spanish* Vessel therefore oblig'd the Governor to alter his carriage toward us, and to facilitate the Return of our Vessel, which he thought good to make use of, for want of another to carry his Letters and Prisoners into *Spain*; upon condition we would take upon us  
this

this Charge, he suffer'd us after a tacite manner to do our business, and to carry off 4000 Hides; but we having great Acquaintance with the Merchants of the Place, manag'd our Affairs so well, that under the Umbrage of this permission, we sold all our Goods, and brought away a Rich Cargo, in Silver, Hides, and other Commodities, after which without loosing any time we took our Course for *Spain*.

At our Arrival in the River of *Corunna* in *Gallicia*, we receiv'd Advice by the Letters which N— sent us to the Ports upon all the Coasts, that there was an Order from the King of *Spain* to seize us at our return, because we had been at *Buenos Ayres* without leave. Upon this we resolv'd (after we had sent the Letters and Prisoners, that were committed to our Charge to the Governor of *Corunna* by the hand of the Sergeant Major of *Buenos Ayres*, who came about the Affairs of that Country in our Vessel) to pass out of that River, and to go 6 Leagnes from thence into the Road of *Barias*, where I found a small Vessel, in which I loaded the greatest part of what I had on my own account, and that of my Friends. The Governor of *Corunna* receiving advice of it, dispatch'd a Hoy after me to stop me, but I us'd that precaution and diligence, that this Hoy could never

ver come up with me, so that I happily arriv'd in *France* at the Port of *Socca*, where I by this means sav'd the fruit of my Labours and long Voyage. The great Ship which I left in the Road of *Barias* had not so favourable a Lot, and one may say, was ship-wrack'd at the very Port; for having left the Road of *Barias*, to get speedily to that of *Santonge*, to secure all the Goods she had on board, except 4000 Hides, of which her Bill of Lading gave an account, and having begun to put 600 Hides into a *Dutch* Vessel that she met there, the bad Weather constrain'd her to put in at the Port from whence she first went out, where she was Confiscated with all her Cargo for the use of the King of *Spain*, under the pretence before spoken of, that she had not the Permission of his Catholick Majesty for her Voyage.

While these things were transacting, the Sergeant Major of *Buenos Ayres* Arriv'd at *Madrid*, and the King of *Spain* having Caused the Informations he brought to be examin'd, which principally insisted upon the necessity there was of sending new Recruits of Men and Ammunition, to augment the Carisons of *Buenos Ayres*, and of *Chili*, the better to secure the Country against the Enterprizes of Strangers, and also from the attempt of the Savages of *Chili*,

im-

immediately orderd Three Vessels to be Equipp'd for this purpose, the Command of which was given to N—. There was good store of Ammunition Embark'd in 'em, but for Recruits of Souldiers, there were but 300 Men, of whom the greatest part were sent into *Chili*. In the same Vessel there were Lawyers sent, to form a Court of Common-Justice, which they call an Audience, at *Buenos Ayres*, where there were only some Officers for the Decisions of Petty Matters before, the Greater Causes being remitted to the Audience that is Established at *Chaquisaca*, otherwise call'd *la Plata*, in the Province of *Los Charcas*, 500 Leagues from *Buenos Ayres*.

When N— return'd from this Voyage, he came to *Oyarson* in the Province of *Guipuscoa* his Native Country, from whence he sent me an account of himself, and we agreed to have a secret Enterview upon the Frontiers; accordingly we met, and gave one another an account of the Affairs in which we were both concern'd; and by this account we found there were about 60000 Livers due from him to me, which he has not yet paid.

F I N I S.



A  
JOURNAL  
OF THE  
TRAVELS  
OF  
JOHN GRILLET,  
AND  
FRANCIS BECHAMEL  
INTO  
G U I A N A,  
In the Year, 1674.

IN  
Order to Discover the *Great Lake*  
of *PARIMA*, and the many Cities  
said to be situated on its Banks, and  
reputed the Richest in the *WORLD*.

---

L O N D O N :  
Printed for *Samuel Buckley*. 1698.

A LETTER WRITTEN TO  
THE LORD OF THE TREASURY  
AT BRISTOL, 1557

My Lord,  
I have the honor to receive  
your letter of the 15th instant  
concerning the petition  
of the merchants of  
Bristol touching the  
importation of  
wool and woolen  
clothes into  
France, and  
other countries  
where they are  
not lawfully  
exported.  
I have considered  
the same, and  
am sorry to hear  
that the petitioners  
do desire to have  
the same liberty  
as the merchants  
of other countries  
have, to export  
their wares  
into those parts  
where they are  
not lawfully  
exported.  
But I am bound  
to observe the  
statute in that  
 behalf made,  
which doth  
forbid the  
exportation  
of wool and  
woolen clothes  
into France,  
Italy, Spain,  
Portugal, and  
other countries  
where they are  
not lawfully  
exported.  
Therefore I am  
not able to  
grant their  
petition, but  
I will do all  
that I can  
to mitigate  
the burden  
of the same  
statute, so  
far as may  
be possible  
without  
prejudice  
to the  
revenue of  
the crown.



---

A LETTER written from  
the Island of Cayenne, in the Month  
of September, 1674.

Cayenne, Sept. 2.  
1674.

Reverend Father,

**T**HE Discovery that I and Father Be-  
chamel, have made of divers Savage  
Nations on the Continent of Guiana, near the  
Island of Cayenne, obliges me to draw up a  
brief Relation of our Voyage, and to present it to  
your Reverence, that you may know what Em-  
ployment we may have here, and how many  
Missionaries may find a fit Occasion for the Ex-  
ercise of their Zeal. If I had had some Com-  
panions whom I might have left with the Nou-  
ragues and the Acoquas, I should have pierc'd  
much farther into the Country; but the Nou-  
ragues who were our Guides, not daring to ad-  
vance farther into the Country of the Acoquas, to  
retain the good will of 'em both, we should have  
left a Missionary in each of these Nations, that  
the Acoquas might have conducted us to their  
Friends, who (as far as I can conjecture) reach  
quite to the Equinoctial Line. We might also  
have pass'd to the West of the River Maroni,  
and have enter'd into an Alliance with the Na-  
tions that extend to the River of Surinam,  
upon which the Dutch have planted (I) a Co-  
lony.

T 2

lony: but since we have confin'd our selves to those Countries that are from Three Degrees of Northern Latitude to the Equinoctial Line, we need not be afraid that the People of any European Nation will trouble us in our Missions, because there's no gain to be made by em; besides, that we run the risque of being Massacred by the Natives. 'Tis from your Reverence that we expect Support and Assistance so far as you are capable, and shall think convenient in sending us Missionaries of a Vigorous Constitution, of great Vertue, and of a Disposition ready to suffer hardships; because in these parts there can little or no Accommodations be brought to relieve them in case of Sickness; for the less one carries thither so much the better; besides that the Ignorance and Barbarity of those People always give a Missionary just occasion to fear, that they take up mischievous Resolutions against him at the very first shadow of dissatisfaction they receive. I expect here a good number of Missionaries to dispose up and down this vast Country; and I hope your Reverence will not refuse this Request; which obliges me particularly to recommend my self to your good Prayers, who am

Reverend Father,  
Your most Humble, and most Obedient  
Servant in our Lord, John Grillet, of  
the Society of JESUS.

A

---

---

JOURNAL  
OF THE  
TRAVELS, &c.

**T**HE Reverend Father *Francis Mercier* having been sent from *France*, in Quality of Visitor of the Missions of our Society, both in the Islands, and Continent of the Southern *America*, by the Reverend Father, *John Pinet*, Provincial of the Jesuits in *France*; with the Reverend Father *Gerard Brion*, Superior-General of the said Missions, and Father *Mace*, and Father *Alarole*; he arriv'd in the Island of *Cayenne* the 21<sup>st</sup> of *December*, 1673, and parted thence Ten Days after: During his Stay there, he regulated divers Affairs, as well Temporal as Spiritual; and among other Things, finding we had yet no Knowledge of any other People, but the *Galibis*, and *Aracarels*, our Neighbours, who dwell near the Sea, and among whom

the Fathers of our Society employ'd their Talents, with abundance of Zeal; he resolv'd to attempt a Discovery of those Nations that lie remote from the Sea. It was my Happiness to be chosen for so pious a Work; and I was particularly instructed by my Orders, to discover the *Acoquas*, a very populous Nation, according to the Report, some *Nouragues*, who frequent the *Galibis*, gave us; withal, telling us, they were a Warlike People, and us'd to eat Men. One of these *Nouragues* being ask'd, Two Months before the Arrival of the Reverend Father-Visitor, *If it were true, that the Acoquas us'd to eat their Enemies*, answer'd, *That he came from 'em Four Months ago, and then they had just made an end of boiling in their Pots, and eating a Nation, which they had destroy'd.* I desir'd the Reverend Father, *Francis Bechamel*, for my Comrade, who has a great Deal of Zeal for these Missions, and has an extraordinary Faculty of learning strange Languages; besides that, he already understood the Tongue of the *Galibis*, which many of the *Nouragues* also speak; some of whom we were oblig'd to take for our Guides, to conduct us to the *Acoquas*; for we yet know no other Way to come at 'em, but through the Country of the *Nouragues*: And Father *Bechamel* took care to provide some *Galibis*,

*Galibis*, to conduct us to the *Nouragues*, who dwell above the Source of the River (2) *Uvia*, and to buy some *Cassave* and *Paste* of (3) *Ovicou* for his Voyage, which we counted would be for about Ten Days.

This Father having provided all Necessaries; namely, Three *Galibis*, some *Cassave*, and *Paste* of *Ovicou*, in hopes of finding by the good Providence of God, either Fish, or Venison, with the Assistance of our *Indians*, we left the Port of *Cayenne* the 25<sup>th</sup> of *January*, taking our Leave of the Reverend Father *Brion*, Superior-General, and Father *Mace*, and Father *Bechet*; but particularly of the (4) *Chevalier de Lezy*, our Governour, who did us the Honour to conduct us together, with the Fathers of our Society, quite to the *Canoo*, in which we embark'd in the Afternoon, having our Fisherman to steer the *Canoo*, and Three *Indian Galibis* to row with our Two Servants. All of us were of Opinion, That our *Canoo* was too small, and indeed it would have prov'd so, if we had embark'd at the coming up of the Tide, for at that time the Waves are very rough near the Shoar; but we avoided this Danger by embarking a little before the Tide came up; so that we were out of all danger when the Tide began to drive us into the River, which gives its Name to this Island; besides,

4 *Travels in Search of*

sides, our *Canoo* being very light, and not easie to be turn'd, was very fit to get clear of several little Falls that are in the River *Uvia*, which we were to pass almost quite through, 'till we came to the Entrance of a lesser River, that let us into the Country of the *Nouragues*, the first Nation that we were willing to be acquainted with, that by their Means we might find a Passage to the *Acoquas*. Our Way was between the Island of *Cayenne*, and the main Land; and in the Evening we arriv'd at the House of one *Deslauriers*, that had settled himself there; we continued with him for a certain Reason, all the next Day, being the 26th of *January*. Since God was pleas'd to protect and lead us by the Hand, as it were in all this Voyage; we must confess, that it was he who inspir'd us with the Resolution to begin it by the River *Uvia*; for we knew but two Ways of entering into the Country of the *Nouragues*, one by the River *Uvia*, and t'other by the River (5) *Aproague*; this last is very difficult, because the Falls of the Water are so great, that the *Sapayes*, and *Galibis*, that live at the Mouth of this River, require a very large Reward to perform this Voyage; and indeed, are the more unwilling to undertake it, because they are afraid of those *Nouragues*, that eat Humane Flesh: So, that when any of 'em  
go

*the Lake of Parima.*

5

go into those Parts, they stay there as little time as they can : Therefore it is scarce possible to go this Way, and if we had gone it, we should have been altogether unacquainted with those *Indians*, that dwell on the Coasts of the River *Uvia*, and with the *Nouragues* that dwell above the Source of it. But without knowing any thing of this before, we chose to pass into the Country of the *Nouragues*, by the *Uvia*, and have this Way visited that whole Nation.

The 27<sup>th</sup> of *January* we left the *Sieur Deslauriers* somewhat late, and therefore proceeded but a little way that Day : Our *Galibis* brought us into a Hut of the (6) *Maprouanes*, as well to shelter us from a great Shower of Rain, as to lodge us (7) there that Night. These *Maprouanes* are about Thirty in Number, who retir'd from their Country, near the River of *Amazons*, to avoid the Persecution of the *Portugese*, and of those *Indians* call'd the (8) *Arianes*, who have almost extirpated that Nation : We found nothing there but *Cassave* and *Ovicou* ; and to the 6<sup>th</sup> of *February*, we had nothing but *Cassave*, besides Two Fishes, and a Couple of Fowls, which the *Galibis* took, (which serv'd us for Four small Meals) and a little Piece of Fish we met with at another *Indian* Cottage.

The

6 *Travels in Search of*

The 28<sup>th</sup> we arriv'd at a Mountain, where a certain *Galibi*, nam'd *Maure*, dwells; this is Twelve Leagues from the Mouth of the *Uvia*: And Two Leagues below this Mountain, the Land upon the River, which is hitherto very low, and almost always overflow'd, is a high, fine Country, as far as the Dwelling of the first *Nouragues*.

The 29<sup>th</sup> we lay in a Wood, and so we did on the 30<sup>th</sup>, having pass'd by a Village of the *Galibi's*, which contain'd but very few People, to make the bigger Day's Journey.

The 31<sup>st</sup> we lodg'd in a *Galibi's* Cottage, whose Family consisted of about Six or Seven, but Three or Four of 'em were absent.

The First of *February* we pass'd the Night in the Woods, and on the Second we lay at a *Galibi's* Cottage again; and this was the poorest, and most pitiful Hut that ever I saw among the *Indians* of this Country; there was in it only one Man, and his Wife and Children, who had nothing at all that Day to sup on. One of their Children was much swell'd, and in a languishing Condition, with a continual Fever; of which we thought it could never recover; therefore Father *Bechamel* baptiz'd it; and the Consolation this gave us sweeten'd all our past Hardships.

The



The Third we went ashoar in the Country of the *Nouragues*, after having this Day, and the Day before pass'd Three Falls in the River *Uvia*, and another in the River of the *Nouragues*; but this was nothing in comparison of the Falls of Water we were to pass on the Rivers of *Aproague* and *Camopi*.

And it was now time to land, for our (9) *Cassave* would have been spent if we had had but a little farther to go in those great Desarts, and vast Forests, that are all along upon this River; upon which there are no other Cottages but those I have been speaking of, and those of some *Galibis* and *Areacarets*, who live towards the Mouth of it, and are in all about a Hundred or Sixscore Persons. This River winds very much, and runs a Course of near Fifty Leagues.

Our *Galibis* serv'd us in this Voyage with a great deal of Respect, and gave us Access to the Chief of these first *Nouragues*, to whom we presented a Hatchet, to engage him to enter into an Alliance with us; they did not remember, that they had seen above One *French* Man before in their Country; so that the Women and Girls, who had never travell'd into the Country of the *Galibis*, were mightily amaz'd at the Sight of us. If one might judge of the whole Nation

8 *Travels in Search of*

tion by these People, one might very well say, the *Nouragues* are a very courteous and affable People. Some of 'em could speak the Language of the *Galibis* very well, and serv'd for our Interpreters. They did all they could to seek Provision, to treat us well ; but being unsuccessful in their Hunting, we had only *Cassave*, and a little Meat at one of our Repasts, but with great Demonstrations of their Kindness. We bought *Cassave* of 'em for the Supply of the Men that belong to our *Canoo* ; and on the Sixth of *February*, after the *Galibis* had been treated with a small Feast after the Fashion of the Country, they parted from us at about Ten a Clock in the Morning.

We also left this first Cottage of the *Nouragues*, on the Seventh of *February*, to go a Journey of Four and Twenty Leagues by Land, over very rugged Mountains ; but went only half a League from thence to lodge that Night, being attended with Two young *Nouragues*, each of about Sixteen or Seventeen Years of Age, who were to carry our Baggage ; here we were to take another Man, who had promis'd to carry our Provision for us, which consisted of *Cassave*, and *Paste* of *Ovicou* : This Man's Wife, in this Second Hut, was ill of a Cancer in her Breast, which so tormented her, and had so exceedingly wasted her, that  
seeing

seeing her under so terrible a Distemper, without the Help of any Medicine, we suppos'd she could not recover, and that in Probability, she would live morally the rest of her Days; for these People endure their Pains and Hardships very patiently, as we observ'd in all the *Galibis*; therefore we resolv'd to baptize her: In order to this, Father *Bechamel* took care to instruct her, having already made some Improvement in the Language of this People, and had likewise the Assistance of one of our young *Nouragues*, who understood the *Galibis* Tongue. This poor sick Woman receiv'd his Instructions very well, and was baptized, which was an occasion of great Comfort to us.

The Eighth, having Bread and Paste of *Ovicon* enough to serve us Four Days, we set forward with our Three *Nouragues*, to perform our Journey of Four and Twenty Leagues, over Mountains all the way, which the *Nouragues* sometimes perform in a Day and a half; but ordinarily in Two or Three Days, when they have Women in their Company. One of our *French* Men of *Cayenne*, that came thence on the 27th of *January*, follow'd us closely with Seven *Galibis*, and overtook us where we lodg'd the Second Night, who gave me a Letter from the Reverend Father *Brion*, our Superior

perior written the day he came away, which gave us no small joy, for it contain'd a great deal of Good Advice, that might be serviceable to us in our Expedition.

This *French-Man* was much fatigu'd with his Journey, and sent his *Indians* before him the day following, who in that one day being the Tenth of *February*, went as much ground as we could do in a day and a half, by reason of the difficulty of the ways. He having joyn'd himself to our Company, and comparing our *Nouragues* with his *Galibis*, found a great alteration, and could not but admire the Meekness and Patience of these *Three Indians*, but especially their Respect. They carry'd our Provisions, yet they durst not take any without asking, tho' we had often told 'em that they might take of 'em when they pleas'd. This day we passed the River *Aratay*, which throws it self into the *Aproague*. The *Aratay* is a fine River, which comes from a Country that is Situate between the Source of the River *Uvia* and the County of the *Mercious*, which the *Nouragues* say is a space of Land that extends about Seven days Journey. We were forc'd to pass this River *Aratay* which is pretty wide and deep, and the Stream of which is somewhat Rapid, in a little *Canoo*, in much danger of being cast away, as this  
*French-*

*French-Man* that joyn'd us happen'd to be, when he repass'd it in his return, where he lost what he carry'd with him; which was all he had in the World. After this we lodg'd a third time in the Woods, and on the Eleventh of *February*, being very weary we about Noon Arriv'd at the Cottage of *Imanon* the *Nourague* a Famous (10) *Piaye* (or *Physician*) in all that Country, where we found the *Galibis* that had advanc'd before us the preceding day. These *Galibis* mutinied against this poor *French-Man*, and probably were the occasion of hindring the *Nouragues* of that place from selling any thing to him; so that he lost his Journey. Nay he was oblig'd to entreat one of our *Nourague* Guides to carry part of his Iron Wares, which he brought to trade with, because these *Galibis* refus'd to help him. And there was no remedy for it but Patience, since he was 80 Leagues from *Cayenne*, in a Nation that had no Commerce with the *French*.

We did not part with our Three Guides without regret; but we could not detain 'em, because they were oblig'd to return for several good Reasons. The Principal of 'em whose Name was *Paraton*, told us, for our comfort, that in the place where we now were, which they call *Caraoribo*, from the Name of a little River that passes by it,  
we

we should find a great many *Paratous*, he meant a great many *Nouragues*, as good humor'd as himself. But we found a great deal of difference in the Temper of those Guides we had from *Caraoribo* to the *Acoquas*, and of those we had before.

As soon as these had left us, we enter'd into a good Correspondence with the Chief *Camiami* the Father of *Imanon*, by presenting him with a Hatchet ; this is a very Famous Chief, and the Principal one the *Nouragues* have, and the next to him in Eminence, is the Chief of the *Nouragues* of *Uvia*. This *Camiami* the day after our Arrival came to his Son's Cottage, (for his own is upon the River *Aproague*) he may be about 60 Years of Age, and seems to be still very Vigorous: His Countenance tho' lean has a Warlike Mien, but withal he has a Savage Aspect ; his Humour is but very indifferent toward Strangers, tho' mild enough toward his own People, to whom according to the Fashion of the Country, he every day gives the Good-morrow, and the Good-night, from the Oldest People to Children of Fifteen Years of Age. He promis'd us to conduct us quite to the *Acoquas*, when his *Canoo* was made, to whose Country he pretended he would go himself, and desir'd but the space of Ten Days to finish this *Canoo* ; now tho' we knew well enough after what man-  
ner

ner the *Indians* us'd to reckon, who are often Three Months in doing what they might perform in the space of Ten Days : we resolv'd however to continue with him to have the advantage of being under his Protection ; and to perswade him, if we should find him make too long a delay, to borrow another *Canoo*, that was at Five Days Journy distance from us ; and in the mean time to acquaint our selves with the Language of the *Nouragues* as much as we could, which (as we were told) differ'd but little from that of the *Acoquas* and *Mercious*. The Language of the *Galibis*, which some of us understood, and which was very Familiar to Father *Bechamel* was some help to us on this Occasion. This *Nouragues* Tongue is not of an easie and soft Pronunciation like that of the *Galibis*, but has a great number of Words that must be pronounc'd with very rough Aspirations, others of 'em can't be pronounc'd without shutting the Teeth ; at another time one must speak through the Nose ; and sometimes these Three difficulties all occur in the same Word.

Father *Bechamel* immediately began to apply himself to the study of this Language ; and I made so much advantage of his Labour in which he succeeded to admiration, that by means of the *Galibis* Language I made a small Discourse of the Cre-  
V ation

ation of the World ; to make these People know something of their Creator. *Imanon* the Master of this Hut was the first that took delight in hearing this Discourse, and after him the Chief himself ; and Five or Six others, as they were working would repeat in that very indiffent *Galibis* I could speak, these Words ; *God made the Heavens, God made the Earth, &c.* Here were many Men that had each of 'em Two Wives, and one of 'em who had Three ; this did not hinder me from telling 'em in the Account I gave 'em of the Creation of Mankind ; that God made but one Woman for the First Man, and that he did not allow one Man to have Two Wives. And tho' all these *Nouragues* perceiv'd we condemn'd their Custom of taking Two or Three Wives at a time, yet they said not a word against the Christian Law for not indulging the same Liberty.

Seeing these People so docile and pliable, I was willing to try if the Songs of the Church would please 'em, and accordingly I sang the *Magnificat* in the first Tune, *Father Bechamel* and our Two Servants joining in with me. This was so grateful to 'em, that afterwards we ordinarily sang some Hymns three-times a day to their great satisfaction. Nay some of 'em learn'd to answer to the *Litanies* of the Blessed Virgin,



gin, which we sang every Evening. In the mean while our Chief's *Canoo* went forward but very (11) slowly, and we thought we had much better endeavour to prevail with him to borrow another, with which he comply'd, and sent Two of his Men for this end Five Days Journey from his House, to get a convenient one for us.

It was the Twenty eighth of *February*, when these Men parted from us, and seeing him the next day which was the First of *March* dispatch away another Company of his Men, we thought convenient to make use of this occasion to engage some of 'em to carry our Baggage, whom Father *Bechamel* accompany'd, together with one of our Servants, while I and our other Servant remain'd with the Chief, that we might give him no offence; because we stood in need of his Protection.

After I had continu'd a Fortnight with him, making all the Children say their Prayers Morning and Evening, and repeating my little Instructions to the greatest part of those I was acquainted with, but especially to Three Young Men who were well Marry'd, confirming 'em in the Resolution they had made never to take a Second Wife; of which promise they seem'd to make no difficulty. I set forward the

Fifteenth of *March*, to seek Father *Bechamel*, and to wait for the Chief of the Cottage, who was to go by Water Five days after with his *Canoo* ; I had but Three Leagues to go by Land, whereas it was near Fifteen by Water. From that time I found those People still more teachable, and when the Captain return'd, among Four and twenty Persons, there were not above Three, but signified they took a great deal of pleasure in my Instructions. During our stay here, a Serpent came in the Night in the place where we lay, and bit a Hound, so that he died in 30 Hours after. This Accident was Injurious to us, because the Chief, and the Owner of the Dog attributed it to the Prayers which we sang ; so that I durst not Sing any more, but contented my self to make every body in the Cottage say their Prayers, except three (as I said before) namely the Chief *Camiat*i and Two other Old Men.

The Ninth of *April*, after I had much importun'd the Chief, that we might set forward ; he told us, he was not willing to make this Voyage, and that all his Men should go to set us in our way, and should leave us when we went ashore to go by Land to the Rivers that lead to the *Acoquas*, whether Four of the Company should attend us. We understood that their Voyage

age was determin'd without any regard to us; however we did not scruple to pay 'em for it, being willing to make use of this Opportunity, because it was no easie matter to meet with another. However I oppos'd the Design of having so many Men go with us, because the Two *Canoo*s they had were too small for such a Company: This was a great difficulty with us, and was not resolv'd till the next day, when we represented to the Chief, that we would leave him our little Chest, that we would take very few of our (12) things out of it for our Voyage, that when we return'd I would continue with him; that if he was not pleas'd to assist us in our Voyage, I must return to *Cayenne*, that then he must never expect to see any of us again, and would have no more of our Commodities; this made him resolve to lessen the number of his Men.

The Tenth of *March* we parted, being Sixteen in Number, of which the Chief would needs be one for Three days, that he might bring back his *Canoo*. In the Evening we went ashore into the Woods, and on the Eleventh, after we had pass'd several Falls of Waters in the way we made the Two days, we Arriv'd at a Cottage of the *Nouragues*, Ten Leagues from the former; here we were well receiv'd, and went

forward the Third day with a Third *Canoo* which was very small ; it carry'd only Two Men, a Woman, and a Girl of Ten or Twelve Years Old. We passed Two Falls that were difficult enough, and Arriv'd at a Third, which the *Canoo* could not pass, which has oblig'd the *Nouragues* to make a way to draw their *Canoos* by Land almost half a League, this fall is at Two Degrees, and Forty Six Minutes of Northern Latitude. The *Indians* drew only the little *Canoo* by Land ; for the Chief left us and return'd back with the Two others ; and we who were then Fifteen in Number went to Embark in a great *Canoo*, that was above the Water-fall, which the Two Persons that were sent by *Camiami* had borrow'd ; Four Leagues higher, we found the Mouth of the River *Tenaporibo* : and went to lie in a Cottage hard by, which was yet upon the River *Aproague*, where we found Five *Nourague* Travellers, who were going to the Country of the *Mercious* ; besides whom there was a Woman who had a little Girl of Seven or Eight Months Old that was very ill. *Imanon* (of whom I have spoken) was now the Chief of our Company ; he is the greatest Physician (that is the greatest Juggler) of the Country : who tho' he is a great Hypocrite, and very much for plurality of Wives ; yet did not scruple to acquaint

quaint us, that this Child was very Sick ; when we had examin'd the matter we judg'd it necessary to Baptize her, which Father *Bechamel* did, at the time when these Travellers parted from us. I had before Baptiz'd a little Girl in the Cottage of this *Imanon* immediately after it was born, because the Mother of it when she brought it into the World had left it in the (13) Dirt, from whence they would not take it up for a long time, being told of this disorder, and finding they would put nothing under the Infant to keep it from the coldness of the Mud, and of the Night I baptiz'd it.

The Fourteenth we left this Hutt, and presently enter'd into the River of *Tenaporibo*, which is very deep and rapid, tho' it winds much ; we were not the First French-Men that had been upon this River ; and we have been inform'd that Three *English*-Men were kill'd and Eaten there (14) some Years ago by the *Nouragues* : 'Tis very difficult to Navigate this River, meerly because of its narrowness, and because the great Trees upon the Banks of it when they fall, often extend their Branches to the other side, so that one must either pass over or under these Trees, which is not done without a great deal of difficulty. We lay one Night in the Woods, and on the Fifteenth Arriv'd at a Hutt where we conti-

nued to the Eighteenth, which was the last Day we were upon this River, and in the Evening we saw the last Company of the *Nouragues* on this River, 80 Leagues from the Mouth of it: This Company consists of Four Huts, at a little distance one from another, wherein there are above Sixscore Persons, of a good natural Disposition, and very teachable: There was not one in the Cottage, where we lodg'd, but was taught by us, to pray to God every Day; this Cottage was compos'd of several Men, some of whom were single Persons, others were married only to one Wife, with whom they liv'd very well; and there is great Probability of making good Christians of 'em. This Cottage is at Two Degrees, Forty Two Minutes of Northern Latitude, and together with the Neighbouring ones, and two others at Two Leagues distance, might give employ to a good Missionary.

We left this Hut, on the Twenty Seventh of *April*, towards Evening, to go and seek our Guides, who were not far off, with whom we advanc'd by Land, and went only Five Leagues among very difficult Mountains.

The Twenty Ninth we travell'd about Ten Leagues, in a Way a little more pleasant, and lay in the Woods as we had  
done

done the Night before. Our Three Guides shew'd us Two Rivulets, which they said were *Tenaporibo* and *Camopi*, that were very rapid; and Five or Six Leagues beyond, *Tenaporibo* is Forty Foot broad, and full Twelve in depth: And at Fifteen Leagues distance, or a little more, the River *Camopi* is as big as the *Seine* is below *Paris*, from whence one may conjecture what Compass it takes in its course.

The Thirtieth we went to lodge upon the River *Eiski*, from whence Two of our *Nouragues*, went to the *Nouragues* of the River *Inipi*, to borrow a *Canoo*, and so to come again at us, where we lodg'd; for the River *Eiski* runs into the *Inipi*. This they did for our Ease, our Journey having been very hard, considering our Weakness.

The First of *May* they came to us again, with a pretty handsome *Canoo*, wherein there were Three *Nouragues*, that never had seen a *French* Man, or any other *European*, in their Lives. Their Aspect was very sweet, and they seem'd to be of a very tractable Disposition; when they had seen us they returned Home, and we embarked in this *Canoo*, a little after Noon, and came to lodge in the Woods, upon the River *Inipi*, where our Guides (15) mended the *Canoo*; and the next Day, being the Second of *May*, having gone down this River, which

which has a very rapid Stream, about Ten Leagues, we enter'd into the River *Camopi*, in which we went Four Leagues more, and that against the Stream: For *Inipi* loses its Name, and with *Camopi* makes a great River, which goes and joyns it self to the River (16) *Yapoque*, Five Days Voyage from thence. *Camopi* is very swift, and has so many difficult Falls, that 'tis no easie Matter to number them; we went up this River the Third and Fourth of *May*, with a great deal of Difficulty and Danger. The Fourth of *May* we lay upon a flat Rock, where we found a Piece of a Min'd Cottage, the Covering of which our Men mended with Boughs: That Day we pass'd through a perilous Place, not only because of a dangerous Fall of Water; but likewise, because it was commanded by a Cottage of *Nouragues*, which is the Last of that Nation, the Master of it is a *Morou*, the Name of an *Indian* Nation, one of whom was hang'd at *Cayenne*, above a Year ago, for killing a *French* Man: We had Reason to fear, that he would, after the Manner of the *Indians*, revenge this Man's Death upon us; but one of our Guides, who was also a *Morou*, had married his Daughter, and we hop'd the Presence of this young Man, whom we then took to be a *Nourague*, would divert his ill Humour;



as indeed it happen'd : And after we were got ashoar upon our flat Rock, which is in the Country of the *Acoquas*, we were greatly comforted to see our Three Guides ask for their Supper by the Sign of the Cross, where no Person had ever done it before ; and that, without having any need to be put in mind of it. But that which still increas'd our Joy, was, that the youngest of our Guides, who might be about Seventeen Years of Age, after Supper, of his own accord, sang in the Tune of the Church, *Sancta Maria, Ora pro nobis* ; having been yet taught no more than that. I continued the Litanies, and he answer'd me. Towards Evening our principal Guide gave a Signal, with a sort of a Pipe, that may be heard at a great Distance. The next Day, being the Fifth of *May*, we had a very rainy Morning, which hinder'd us from going forward ; but notwithstanding the Rain about Nine a Clock in the Morning, we saw three young *Acoquas*, who were sent to know who we were, we went with them towards Noon, and about Three a Clock arriv'd soon after them, at the first Hut of the *Acoquas* ; which is at Two Degrees, and Twenty Five Minutes of Northern Latitude. They were mightily pleas'd to see us ; for in all appearance, they had some considerable time before heard of our  
Voyage.

Voyage. They so familiarly acquainted themselves with us, that in Three Days time, there was not one of them that refus'd to pray to God ; and we every Day put 'em upon saying their Prayers Morning and Evening. The Second Day our first Guide brought us to two other Cottages not far off ; where we were entertain'd with as much Kindness, as Strangers could desire of a Savage People : Immediately, those that liv'd about a Day's Journey more remote receiv'd the News of our Arrival, and came to see us. They all admir'd our Hats, our Cassocks, our Shooes, a Gun ; which we made our first Guide discharge from time to time, in great Companies of 'em ; the Pictures of our *Breviaries*, our Writing, and the Songs of the Church, which they desir'd to hear a great many times in a Day. They heard our Instructions with Attention ; and seem'd to have very good Sentiments, and to be much affected, when we told 'em, that formerly the People of our Country were ignorant of God, and that some good People came into our Nation, who taught us, that there was a God, who would make us happy for ever in Heaven ; and what we were to do, that we might go to that blessed Place : That we were come to do them the same good Office, that they might go to Heaven as well as we.

That

That which gives me good Hopes of the Conversion of this Nation, is, that they heard those Commands of God with Reverence, which are most opposite to their ancient Manner of living. And this gives me occasion to speak more distinctly of what I have remark'd in these Two Nations.

The *Nouragues* and the *Acoquas*, in Matter of Religion, are the same with the *Galibis*. They acknowledge there is a God, but don't worship him. They say he dwells in Heaven, without knowing whether he is a Spirit or no, but rather seem to believe he has a Body. The *Galibis* call God (17) *Tamoucicabo*; that is as much as to say, the Ancient of Heaven. The *Nouragues* and the *Acoquas* call him *Maire*, and never talk of him but in fabulous Stories: They have a great many Superstitions, which are only like the idle Tales and Fooleries of Children, in which I never observ'd 'em practise any Idolatry: But I am very much afraid their Physicians, by their juggling Tricks, debauch the Women and Maids; for they have given me great Reason to think so.

The natural Disposition of the *Nouragues* and *Acoquas* is mild; but the more remote from the Sea the *Nouragues* live, the more tractable you'll find 'em; for the frequent Concourse they have with the *Indians*, on  
the

the Sea-Coasts, renders 'em more uncontrollable and difficult to be treated with. 'Tis certain, the *Acoquas* are quite another sort of People, than the *French* at *Cayenne* imagine 'em to be, who account 'em fierce, cruel, treacherous and perfidious, to those they entertain, For if one may judge of that Nation, by near Two Hundred of 'em, whom we have seen, they are an honest, affable, pleasant People, and are very attentive and ready to receive what is said to 'em. 'Tis true, they not long since exterminated a small Nation, and eat several of them; but I attribute this Barbarity to the ill Custom of the Country, rather than to the Disposition of the People; and this seems the more probable, because being inform'd Two or Three Days after our arrival, that there was half a Day's Journey from us, some of the Flesh of a *Magapa* (the Name of a People that are their Enemies) whom they had newly kill'd with another, while they were watching their opportunity to surprize one or other of the *Acoquas* alone; and besides, one of the People of the Cottage having set before us the Jaw of a young Man; we told 'em, *This was not well done, and that God forbids us to kill an Enemy, when we take him Prisoner, and to eat him afterwards*: At this they look'd down very much without giving  
one

one Word of a Reply. Another time, the Master of one of the Cottages having heard, that the *Galibis* to hinder us from undertaking this Voyage, had threaten'd us, that we should be roasted by the *Acoquas*, was fill'd with great Indignation at it, and could not be pacified till I told him, I took those *Galibis* for Lyars and Fools: Having moreover, told 'em, I had been made Prisoner of War by the *English*, and restor'd to the *French*, without receiving any harm; and that God would not allow us to kill those we took in War; they seem'd pretty well to approve of this Law. And tho' this barbarous Custom is a Point so much establish'd and receiv'd in all Times among the *Acoquas*, and among the *Nouragues* too; yet it seems, by what I have been relating, to be no difficult Matter to restrain 'em from this Savage Practice, of killing and eating their Enemiès.

*Polygamy* is a Second Obstacle which we found against the Christian Religion among these Two Nations of the *Nouragues*, and *Acoquas*; for where there's one Man to be found, that has but one Wife, there are six, who have each of 'em two or three. The Hope that may be conceiv'd for the eradicating of this Vice, is, not concerning Persons that are already pre-in-gag'd in this evil Custom, but only those  
that

that have yet but one Wife, and young Men that are not yet married, who might be perswaded to be content with one Wife. I confess, there's no hope of working upon the others.

The Way of Living among the People of these Two Nations, is very agreeable, and has something more courteous in it, than that of the *Galibis*. For Instance, Among the *Galibis*, those that are married, dine every one apart, and those that are unmarried eat all together; and all the Women, Maids and little Children, go to another side of the Hut to eat. The *Nouragues* and *Acoquas* do quite otherwise, for the Husband eats with his Wife, or Wives and Children with admirable Agreement and Union. They don't drink (19) much, but are great eaters; and are always Fishing or Hunting, in which they spare no Pains, to get their Living. They are all Lyars, as well as all other *Indians*, that we know. And when they perceive their Lyes are discover'd, they retire, seeming to be a little asham'd, but will not fail to frame a Lye again on the next Occasion. The *Nouragues* endeavour'd to fright us with a great many Stories of their own Invention, to make us alter our Resolution of going to the *Acoquas*, that we might spend all our Stock of Goods with them; sometimes telling us,  
they

they had seen the Track of some strange wild Beast ; sometimes that the *Caranes*, their Enemies, were running up and down their Woods, and that they had observ'd the Steps of Three of that Nation not far from their Hut : But when they saw they could not terrifie us, they did what we would have 'em. This Vice induces 'em to promise much, and to perform but little ; which also is occasion'd by the little Judgment they have, to esteem any thing according to the Value and Importance of it ; for this makes 'em not matter what Injury they do any one, in breaking their Word ; nor how much they dishonour themselves in so doing. To have a thorough Conception, how common this is in these Two Nations (which is also rife among all the *Indian* Nations we are acquainted with) one must compare 'em to little Children, who esteem what they see only by Fancy : They are also subject to Steal ; so that sometimes they must be narrowly watch'd, or else they will be pilfering one thing or other.

The *Nouragues* make about Six or Seven Hundred Persons, the *Mercious*, who dwell on the West-side of 'em, are equal to 'em in Number ; the *Acoquas* are South of 'em, and conceal'd from us the Strength of their Nation ; however, I suppose it may be three

or four times stronger than that of the *Nouragues*; for having ask'd an old Woman, how many Cottages there were on one side, to which we pointed; she told us, there were Ten; then pointing toward the Quarter, where their Chief dwelt, she took a (20) Handful of her Hair, to signify to us, the great Number of Cottages there were on that side. Between the *Acoquas*, and the *Mercious*, they told us, there was the Nation of the *Pirios*, which the *Acoquas* say, are equal to themselves in Strength: On the East and South-East-side are the *Pirionaus*, and on the East the *Pirios* and *Magapas*, and in the midst of all these Nations the *Morous*, who are very barbarous. These Nations all speak one and the same Language, and are understood by the *Caranes*, who are the Enemies of the *Nouragues*. They also say, the *Maranes*, who are a very great People, understand the same Tongue: On the South South-West of the *Acoquas* are the *Aramisas*, whose Language borders on that of the *Galibis*, having a great many of the same Words in it, tho' they are unacquainted with that Nation. The *Acoquas* say, these *Aramisas* are a very great Nation. If there be a Lake of *Parima*, these People can't be Forty Leagues distant from it on the North-side: We could get no Account of this Lake.

There



There was not one *Indian*, who when we enquir'd of them, whether they did not know of a vast Place of Water like the Sea, the Sand of which is *Caracoli* (for so they call Gold, Silver and Copper) could give me the least Intelligence of it. These (21) *Aramisas* are in the same Longitude, wherein the Maps place the Eastern Part of the Lake of *Parima*.

After we had been with the *Acoquas* Twelve or Thirteen Days, the Air grew unwholsome, by an excessive Heat, at a time when there was very little Wind; which seldom fails to blow in those Countries; and indeed, 'tis that that renders 'em habitable. Father *Bechamel* was taken with a Tertian Ague, and the strongest of our Servants also fell very sick: We therefore press'd our Guides to return, since they were not willing to conduct us any farther, nor suffer the *Acoquas* to go and fetch their Chief, who dwelt at the Distance of Three Days Journey, from the Place where we were, with whom we would have contracted an Alliance. These Three Guides became insolent, upon the Supposition, that it was to honour them that the *Acoquas* came in such great Numbers; tho' in all appearance, it was the Curiosity of seeing us *French* Men that brought 'em together: They became very troublesome, especially

the *Morou*, who gave sufficient Indications of his wicked Disposition, perswading the *Acoquas*, that we ought to leave them all our Wares ; these so unreasonable Proposals did not much surprize us ; but to give 'em good Hopes of our Return, we left an (22) Iron Tool of Half a Crown Price with one of 'em, who had but one Wife, upon Condition, that I should have a great (23) Hamock when I came again ; promising I would then give him a Bill and a Knife, to make up what this wanted of the Value of it. I made choice of this Man on purpose to signifie what respect I had for lawful Marriages ; and he understood me very well, and promis'd me, he would not take a Second Wife, during the Life of this he already had, with whom he had liv'd at least Eight or Nine Years, for they had a Daughter about Seven Years old ; however, this Project facilitated our Return.

The 25th of *May* we embark'd on the *River Camopi*, in Two *Canoo's* ; Father *Behamel* was in the least of 'em, with our principal *Nourague*, and an *Acoquas*, who had a Mind to go with us to *Cayenne* ; and I went in the other with our Two Servants, the *Morou*, and the young *Nourague*, who not taking care to guide the Vessel right, let it run so near the Precipice of a great  
Fall

Fall of Water, that those in the other *Canoo*, cry'd out, believing we should be lost: But these Two young Men, with much ado, brought our *Canoo* under a Rock, that brake the Violence of the Stream, and getting up the Rock, with all their Might, drew the *Canoo* out of this Danger. 'Tis abundantly more dangerous to go down these Falls, than to get up 'em; because they chose those places where the Water runs less violently to get the *Canoo* up with main Strength, whereas in going down 'em they take the swiftest Part of the Stream, so that one runs a greater Hazard of one's Life, than can easily be express'd.

After having pass'd these Dangers, the Second Day after we embark'd, our young *Nourague*, that had never run the like Risque before, said in his own Language, *God is good, and is not angry with us.* When we came to the Place, where we were to go by Land, betwixt the River *Inipi* and *Tenaporibo*, our Guides, who were well loaded with Hammocks, and other things, which they had bought of the *Acoquas*, were not willing to help us, which yet they would have done, if that *Moron* had not put 'em out of Humour: They walk'd very fast, as the *Indians* are wont to do, when they are loaded, and at last left us at Five Leagues distance from *Tenaporibo*; but

by the Goodness of God we got thro' without losing our Way, by following a Path, in which these *Indians* had thrown little Boughs, in several places where it was not easie to discern the Track; to signifie which Way they went. When we came within Three quarters of a League of the first Cottages, we heard some *Nouragues* calling to us, who brought us *Cassave* and *Fish* to eat, and some *Ovicon* to drink.

The First Day of *June* our young *Morou*, being drunk, treated us very ill, which made us resolve to return to *Cayenne* in another *Canoo*, and in the Company of other *Indians*, and the rather because our Distempers increas'd upon us. I had a violent Fever, and a great Cough, and Father *Bechamel* was very ill, as well as the lustiest of our Servants. And now as we had need of the special Assistance of Providence, to find a Conveniency for our Return; so it pleas'd God to manifest to us, how particular a Care he took of our Preservation, in furnishing us with what we needed; not indeed, at the Time we wish'd, nor after that Manner we thought best, but in such a Season, and in such a Way, as was most convenient for us, 'till at length we arriv'd at *Cayenne*.

The Second Day of *June* we made an Agreement with the first *Nourague*, who had  
done

done us some Service at *Caraotibo*, Three Leagues from *Aproague*, who was of a very good Temper, and was come thither with two other *Nouragues* of the same Place, who had a Kindness for us, and were willing to return Home as soon as they could. We determin'd to set forward the next Day, to prevent our *Morou*, and our other Guides, who were elsewhere, from opposing our Design. We were to go three Leagues by Land, or Seven by Water, to get to this Man's *Canoo*; but I was so ill, I could not go by Land, and our Servant was as bad as I, so that we were forc'd to seek a *Canoo*, to go by Water, the Providence God provided us a little One, which we hired, that was sunk in the Water, but was big enough to carry Four of us; namely, the *Indian* and his Wife, our Servant and my self. Father *Bechaniel*, tho' very weak, had the Courage to undertake the Journey on Foot, with our other Servant. We were desirous to have gone forward the next Day, from the Place where this *Nourague's Canoo* lay; but we should not have been able to have undergone this Fatigue: It pleas'd God to provide for our Welfare, on this occasion, in permitting the *Indians* to detain us Eleven Days in this Place, where there were near Sixty Persons: The Chief of whom, who had a Son in the Neighbourhood of *Cayenne*,

plac'd us in a Cottage by our selves, that we might not be disturb'd, with the Noise of a great Merry-meeting they were going to have, and order'd his Wife to treat us the best she could: This was partly from his good Humour, and partly to secure his Son from receiving any ill Treatment from the *French* at *Cayenne*. God was pleas'd, during our stay here, to give us an Opportunity again, to instruct a Woman that was almost eaten up with Cancers; so that she was at length baptiz'd by Father *Bechamel*, the Day before we left this Place: This Father was so weak, that he could not repeat his Breviary walking; and yet the next Day, he was strong enough to walk near a League from thence to embark. There now remain'd but one Difficulty to encounter with, since we were in the Hands of Three very honest *Nouragues*; and that was, how to get away from *Camiati's* Cottage, with our little Chest that contain'd all our Goods; and to find a convenient Passage to the Mouth of the *Aproagne*; for I had promis'd *Camiati*, to continue with him after my return from the *Acaquas*; and those People are not very easie, when they see us carry our Commodities out of their Cottages; so that we had Reason to fear, that he would detain us with him, at least Two Months, before he would conduct us to  
the

the *Indians*, that dwell at the mouth of the *Aprague* : But it pleas'd God to remove all these Obstructions ; for our Three *Nouragues* promis'd to convey us to the Sea, upon condition that we would give 'em an indifferent Reward. And as we went by *Camiami's* Cottage, we found he was gone a Hunting, and those we found in his Cottage were only his Two Wives, and some Strangers, who durst not hinder us from taking our little Chest, and our Three Guides, tho' they were affraid to displeas *Camiami* their Chief, yet knew not how to refuse to lead us to a Cottage that was a League lower, where at that time no body dwelt, and hither they were to go in order to pass by Land to *Caraotibo* where they dwelt, and to conduct their Wives thither, and then to come back again to us ; tho' they would fain have set us ashore at *Camiami's* House, and left us there.

When we Arriv'd at the empty Cottage, I found my self so ill, that I thought I should have died ; but being somewhat recruited again, and perceiving the Master of the *Canoo* had a mind to go and speak with *Camiami*, and that one of our Servants desir'd to go with him, to fetch a Hound he had bought that was run away thither. I gave him an Iron-tool of half a Crown price to present from me to *Camiami*, that he might order

der his Wives to prepare me a Hamock, and bid him tell him I would pay the rest at my return, which should be as soon as I had recover'd my Health: this I did to prevent his offering any injury to our Servant, and that he might not oppose us in our design of going back. The Master of the *Canoo* told the Story of the Affront the Young *Moron* gave us, and of the ill Condition of my Health, so well to *Camiami*; that when he had receiv'd the Present I sent him, he would needs accompany me to the Mouth of the *Aprague*, to the Cottage of the Chief of the *Sapayes*, whom he had had a mind to Visit a great while, being his very good Friend. He came accordingly the next day with one of his Sons, who was about Thirty Years of Age, and his Two Wives, and sent home Two of our Guides, taking their places, he sent the Woman, and one of our Servants one League by Land. Our other Servant continued in the *Canoo* to row, or to use the Term of the Country to *Pagay*, with these Three stout *Nouragues*; we also remain'd in the *Canoo*, by reason of our Weakness, which would not suffer us to go this League by Land. They lighted the *Canoo* thus, that they might the better pass a fall of the River, that was so rough and difficult, that the *Indians* could not choose but turn pale at the extreme danger we were



were in. One time amongst others they toil'd so hard to keep the *Canoo* from being carry'd down a precipice of Water, that when they had made shift to get under a Rock, that breaks the Violence of the Stream, they were forc'd to rest themselves for half a quarter of an Hour, because they were so much spent, that they could scarce fetch their Breath. I have twice been very near being cast away in two Ships, but the sight of this fall of the River was more dreadful to me, than any thing I ever saw at Sea.

The Nineteenth of *June* we pass'd down Two of these Falls, at the first they sent the Women away by Land, and cross'd the River to know of a *Galibi* that was lately come thither to make a new Cottage, what course they had best take to avoid being over-set, because the Bed of the River declin'd, so that it gave an extraordinary rapidity to the Stream; and besides there were a great many Rocks under water, against which we were liable to be dash'd, and so cast away. And observing our Men were in a great perplexity in their minds about it, notwithstanding all the directions this Man gave 'em, we intreated him to conduct us through this difficult passage, promising him a Fishing-hook for his pains, which he willingly undertook, and happily perform'd. At the Second which was the last we met  
with

with upon the *Aproague*, we all went ashore and walk'd along the River-side upon very uneven Rocks, and the *Nouragues* held the *Canoo* by a Line which they tied behind it, and so let it go gently down this place, which is very dangerous at Low-water, for the Flowing of the Tide covers it, tho' 'tis Twenty Leagues up the River.

After we had pass'd these many difficulties by the mercy of God; we at last had no Cassave left, no Meat nor Fish, nor *Ovicou*, when we were distant a days Voyage and a half from the Cottage of the *Sapayes*, but God of his Goodness was pleas'd to make Provision for our great necessity; for as we coasted along the River we saw a Dog barking; upon which the *Nouragues* call'd out to know if any body were a Hunting, and presently to their great joy perceiv'd it was their good Friend, the Chief of the *Sapayes*, who came to us, and saluted us all with demonstrations of Friendship. We did what the *Nouragues* would not venture to do, that is, to ask him to sell us some Provision; acquainting him, that neither we nor the *Nouragues* had any left. When he understood in what necessity we were, he sent to fetch his *Canoo*, which was a large one, and very well stor'd with Cassave, *Ovicou*, Meat and Fish (24) *Boucaneed*; which he furnish'd us and the *Nouragues*,  
and

and we paid him for it immediately. He told us his Lodging was a League off, whither he would come and meet us in the Evening, and that because his little half-cover'd Hut had only room enough for him and his Men, we must make another for our selves. He came according to his word toward Night, and the next day he made Father *Bechamel* and me go into his *Canoo*, because he thought the *Nouragues Canoo* was over-loaded.

On the 21<sup>st</sup> we Arriv'd at the Cottage of this Chief of the *Sapayes*, where we were kindly entertain'd. We were no sooner got thither, but we began to think how we should get from thence to *Cayenne*; and we could think of no better way, than to persuade the Chief of the *Sapayes* to conduct us thither himself, which would have taken up Three Weeks time, and would have been a great charge to us, but the Providence of God had made Provision for us, for the next day we were inform'd that a Chief of the *Galibis* would come the day following to take a *Sapaye* with him to go to *Cayenne*, and from thence to *Maroni*, from whence he was to fetch his Son, who had been there with the *Sapayes* for Two Years, as well as the Son of the Chief of the *Sapayes*. He was willing to take us in his *Canoo* for a small matter, and we went to  
Lodge

Lodge at a small Island, which is in the River at a pretty good distance from the Sea; here we stay'd the Twenty fourth of *June*. I observ'd that the Sea came up here Eight Foot high, and concluded from thence, because it covers the last Fall of the River, that it declines but Eight Foot in the space of Twenty five Leagues from the Sea. In the Night they heard the Cry of a Bird, and said to one another in the *Galibis* Tongue, *Hark how the Devil cries*; I reprov'd 'em, telling 'em they were mistaken, and that the Devil had no Body, but was a Spirit as our Souls are, which they confess to be Invisible and Immortal, which yet they do not say of the Devils, but pretend that their Physicians or *Piaies* kill 'em with great Clubs. *The Nouragues* of one Cottage made the Figure of a Man in the the way by which they thought the Devil came to their Cottage in the Night, to make 'em Sick; that so while he stop'd at this Fantome and took it to be a *Nourague*, the *Piaies* that watch'd for him might take their opportunity, when they saw him, to knock him on the head. We parted from this Island to go and lodge at *Co*, from whence the next day we saw a great many *Canoos* of the *Galibis* at Sea, which were going toward the River of *Amazons*, these the Master of our *Canoo*, and the *Sapayé* went

went to visit, drawing their *Canoos* along over the Mud at Low-water, and found in one of 'em the Two Young Men they were going to seek for at *Maroui*. They had now nothing to do but to carry us to *Cayenne*; and because the Sea was so rough, that they could not well bear up against it, we desir'd 'em to set us ashore at *Mabuti*, the first place we could land at in the Island of *Cayenne*, which they compass'd with a great deal of Labour. As soon as I set my Foot upon the Sand, I fell down upon my Knees to thank God for the Protection he had favour'd us with for a Hundred and Seventy Leagues, since we came from the Country of the *Acoquas*, for our whole Voyage was Two hundred and forty Leagues. We went to lodge at the House of *Mons. Fountain*, whose Estate lies in this part of the Island; and he receiv'd us with great Joy. The next day being the Twenty seventh, Father *Bechet* came to fetch us with Two Horses, and we borrow'd another of (25) *Monsieur Fontaine*, and so Arriv'd at the Fort of *Cayenne*, where the Governor was pleas'd to treat us with all imaginable Friendship. And all the People came about us, to see us, and to signify the great affection they had to us. In three Months I hope by the Grace of God to Visit the Marshes of the *Aracarets*, the *Pali-*  
*cours*,

44 *Travels in Search of, &c.*

*cours*, the *Mayer*, the *Marones*, and the *Conssades*, whose Habitations stand more thick and close one to another, than those I have given an account of in this Relation. Here's a great Field open'd to the Gospel-Labourers, into which I am ready to conduct those that are willing to employ themselves in it, as well as to discover to 'em a great many other Nations: Being fully resolv'd by the Grace of God to expose my Life for so Glorious a purpose, as the Propagation of the Gospel, and the Conversion of such Numbers of People.

---

*Notes*

---

NOTES  
UPON THE  
TRAVELS

OF

Father JOHN GRILLET,

AND

Father FRANCIS BECHAMEL, Jesuits,

INTO

G U I A N A.

Note (1) in the Letter.

A Fort which the *Dutch* took from the *English* Fourteen or Fifteen Year ago, on which the *English* Colony depends, which is pretty Numerous, and was Establish'd there Eight or Ten Years before under the Command of the Lord *Willoughby*. This Fort was built by the *French* in 1644, they quitted it in 1646, for the Reasons that have been reported in divers Relations.

Note (2) P. 3. This River discharges it self into the Sea on the East-side of the *Cayenne*.

Note (3) *Ibid.* Of *Ovicou* they make a sort of Drink of the Consistence and Colour

Y

of

of Milk, by steeping it in Water, it will keep a Month or Six Weeks in a kind of Baskets lin'd with the Leaves of *Bonana-Trees*, which are 4 or 5 Foot long, and above 2 Foot wide.

*Note (4) Ibid.* The Brother of the *Marquis de la Barre*, who was formerly Governor, and the King's Lieutenant General in the *American* Islands, both by Sea and Land, and is now a Captain of one of his Majesty's Ships.

*Note (5) P. 4.* The Mouth of this River is 14 Leagues Eastward from *Cayenne*.

*Note (6) P. 5.* This is one of the Nations that fled into the Country of the *Galibis*.

*Note (7) Ibid.* In these Huts or Cottages the *Indians* hang their Hamocks or Cotton-beds when the Sun sets, in which they repose themselves all Night. They ordinarily rise with the Sun, and then their Wives take down their Beds and Hamocks, and hang 'em in the *Carbet*, which is their kind of Hall or Out-house, the Props of which not only serve to support the Roof, which is made of Palm-leaves, but also to hang up all the Beds of the Men and Boys in the Family, and those of Strangers, when at any time they entertain 'em. This *Carbet* is plac'd Ten or Twelve paces on the upper-side of the Cottage, in which the Women always leave their own Beds. At one end of the Cottage they



they commonly make *Cassave*, and their Liquor *Ovicon*; this part of it serves for the Kitchin, and for all the Work that belongs to the subsistence of the Family. Some of these Cottages have a Loft above to hang their Beds in in the Night; and then the lower-part of the Hut serves for the *Carbet*; where the Men spend the day (when they are at home) in making their Bows and Arrows, and what other conveniencies they want; for their business is different from that of the Women in these Parts, as well as in most other Places. But there's one thing belonging to the other Sex which the Men have usurp'd, that deserves to be treated on in a particular Article, of which I shall only speak a word or two here by the by. They go to bed, when their Wives are deliver'd, and receive the Compliments of their happy delivery as if they had endur'd the pain, and accordingly answer their Visitors as the Women do on the like occasion in other places. This Custom is not peculiar to the *Galibis*, but is us'd in a great many other Nations of *Brasil*, and in other parts of *America*.

'Tis farther to be noted, that their *Carbets* are the places where they hold their Consultations, and deliberate on their most weighty Affairs, which is ordinarily done with great Solemnity; those that are concern'd and invited, assembling together from divers places for this purpose.

Note (8) *Ibid.* This Nation dwells near the mouth of the River of *Amazons*.

Note (9) P. 7. This is the ordinary Bread of the Country, made of a sort of Root, which they scrape, and then press to get the Water out of it, which is a cold Poison, and will kill Men, or Beasts if they drink but half a glass of it; which for all that may be put in Sauces and Pottage, and gives 'em a better relish, provided it be but boyl'd tho' never so little, after which it has no pernicious quality.

Note (10) P. 11. *Piaie* is a Name which the *Galibis* give their Physicians, who besides the practise of Physick pretend also to Divination; but they profess neither, till they have made divers Experiments, one of which is so dangerous that it often makes 'em burst. They stamp the green Leaves of *Tobacco*, and squeeze out the Juice of it, of which they drink the quantity of a large Glass full; so that none but those that are of a very robust Constitution, who try this practise upon themselves, escape with their Lives. Besides divers sorts of Plants, Gumms, and Wood they use to cure diseases and wounds, they have a way of sucking their Patients in that part of the Body in which they feel their pain; and this method is most commonly very successful.

Note (11) P. 15. The reason why they employ so much time in making their *Canoes*,  
is

is because after they have chosen and fell'd a Tree, and have with a Hatchet made it hollow, about the breadth of half a Foot, and about the same depth through the whole length of it, they hollow the rest of it with a gentle Fire; and this work, which goes on very slowly; continues in proportion to the bulk of the piece of Timber, and to the length they give their *Canoo*. This way of making their *Canoos* is very tedious, but tends much to their duration, so that they scarce ever rot, because after they are thus made, the Worm never touches 'em, which is also partly owing to the hardness of the Wood; there being scarce any betwixt the Tropicks but has this quality.

*Note (12) P. 17.* The Commodities that have vent among these Nations are Hatchets, Bills, Knives, Looking-glasses, Hooks, &c.

*Note (13) P. 19.* 'Tis the Custom of this Nation to use their Children after this manner.

*Note (14) Ibid.* In the Year 1625, the *English* attempted to make a Settlement at *Cayenne*, & these Three who were devour'd by the *Indians* were probably some of 'em, for their Establishment did not succeed, they being defeated by the *Indians*, for not managing themselves well towards 'em. Their Principal Plantation was at *Cayenne*, upon the River *Remire*. The same disappointment befel the *Dutch* some Years after.

Note (15) P. 21. The Poop of great *Canoos* being commonly joyn'd to the rest, they caulk it with a sort of fat Earth, which the Water in a little time washes away, and therefore they are oblig'd to put it in a fresh from time to time; and this they call mending or refitting a *Canoo*.

Note (16) P. 22. The mouth of this River enters into the *Amazone*, and into the River of *Cayenne*, about 20 Leagues from the *Aproague*; 'twas from hence that *Monf. Lecy*, the Governor of *Cayenne*, with 10 Men drove away 6 or 700 of the *Dutch*, in the last Wars we had with them; tho' they had a Fort there with some pieces of Canon: At the same time they were likewise twice driven from the River *Aproague*, where they also had a Fort defended with Canon.

Note (17) P. 25. *Tamouci*, or *Tamechi* signifies *Old*, and *Cabo* signifies *Heaven* in the *Galibian* Tongue.

Note (18) P. 27. Line 9. When the *English* came from *Barbadoes*, with 4 or 5 *Frigats*, to make a descent upon *Cayenne* in the Year 1666, *Father Grillet* was Superior of the *Jesuits* there, and was some time amongst the *English*, who left him there with the rest of the Colony when they went away.

Note (19) P. 28. 'Tis true, they drink but little or nothing at their ordinary meals till they have done eating, and then commonly

monly drink one draught ; but when they assemble together, either for Warlike Enterprises, or to begin a *Canoo*, or to launch it when 'tis made, and when they make a Chief, or admit him into their Council, after they have expos'd him to several rude kind of Trials ; they have extraordinary Rejoycings, which frequently hold 3 or 4 days, continuing till they have drank up all their Liquor ; which is what the *French* call *Faire un Vin*. For these occasions they make 3 or 4 different sorts of Drink, some of which become very strong by fermentation, as that which they call *Palinot*, which they make with *Cassave* that is bak'd more than ordinary : The pieces of which they pile up one upon another when they are very hot, and keep 'em thus till they begin to be mouldy, after which they mix them with *Potatoes*, which they cut in small pieces as well as the *Cassave*, and put them in great Earthen Jarrs, then they pour a proportionate quantity of Water upon 'em, and so leave all to ferment and work together till this Liquor is as strong as they desire ; which is after about 5 or 6 days fermentation. They strain it before they use it, and then 'tis of the Colour and Consistence of Beer, of a much better tast, but much more heady and intoxicating. They have besides a great many sorts of drink, the diversity of which Results

from the different Fruits of which they make 'em. But that which they ordinarily make use of, is as white as Milk, and of the same consistence. It is very refreshing and nourishing, and is compos'd of *Cassave* bak'd after their ordinary manner, and *Potatoes* boil'd with it, till they are of the consistence of Paste, this they put into Baskets lin'd with the Leaves of *Bonano*-trees, in which it keeps good for a Month, and then begins to grow sower, but not quite so soon if it be kept in a cool place. When they use it they steep as much as they have present occasion for in a sufficient quantity of Water, and if they are at leisure they strain it: But they often only steep it, and drink it without straining, and if Sugar or Sugar-cains bruis'd be mix'd with it, it comes very near the tast, and colour, and consistence of *Orgeate*, the use of which the *French* have taken from the *Italians* some Years since. This drink is call'd *Ovacou* upon the Continent; and *Ovicon* in the Islands. 'Tis believ'd that the reason why the *Europeans* can never attain to make it so good as the *Indians* do, is because these chew the *Potatoes* and *Cassave*, before they boil 'em together, and understand better what degree of boyling they require, to give this Liquor its greatest perfection. But the seeing this way of its preparation turns ones stomach more than the reading of it; and  
the

the Wine that washes the dirty Feet of the Grape-gatherers as they tread the Grapes is no less nauseous, but the Fermentation both of the one and the other corrects all this uncleanness.

*Note (20) P. 30.* This is their common way of expressing things they cannot number, saying *Enoura*, which signifies [*thus much.*]

*Note (21) P. 31.* This Nation is situated towards the Source of the River *Maroni*, the Mouth of which is about 50 Leagues from *Cayenne* Westward, and 30 from the River *Surinam*; where the *Dutch* have a Fort, which the *French* built in the Year, 1644, and were oblig'd to quit in 1646, for want of Help from *France*. This Fort is 3 Leagues from the Mouth of the *Surinam*, on the Right-hand as you enter into it. The Lord *Willoughby* retir'd thither in 1648, or 1649, with a Colony of 1000 or 1200 *English*, who endeavour'd to support the Interest of the King of *England* against *Cromwell*, in the *Barbadoes*; that is, those of the *Antilles*, or *Antego* Islands, which the *English* have; for the *English* call all those Islands, the *Barbadoes*, as the *French* call all the *Antilles* they possess, *St. Christopher's* Islands.

*Note (22) P. 32.* There are several sorts of Tools proper for the *Indians*, of the Value of about Half a Crown, Two Shillings, Twenty-pence, Fifteen-pence, &c. as Hatchets  
ets

ets or Axes, Bills, with Wooden Handles, others with Iron Handles, in the Socket of which they may be fix'd or taken off at Pleasure; and such little Planing-Axes, as Cooper's Use; this Tool serves the *Indians* in making their *Canoos*, particularly in hollowing the inside of the Tree, they design for that use: They also use Plains to smooth the outside of the *Canoos*, as well as for other Works.

Note (23) *Ibid.* A Hamock is an *Indian* Bed, made of Cotton; tho' they all hang 'em up by the two ends, when they would lie in 'em, sometimes upon 2 Trees, at 10 or 12 Foot distance, and sometimes at two of the Posts that support their Houses, or their Carbets; yet they differ very much both in the Stuff and Work. For Instance, All the Hamocks that are made from the River of *Amazons* to the *Orenoque*, are of Cotton, made full, and almost all without Fringe on the sides; most of 'em colour'd with *Rocou*, or red Paint, quarter'd in Flourishes that are made with pretty good Proportion and exactness; these are most esteem'd for Use, especially in the Islands, because they last a great while; and are stronger than those of *Brazil*, which are so thin, one may generally see through 'em, and are made of twin'd Cotton, much finer than those of *Guiana*, which are also made of twisted  
Cot-



Cotton-thread, but courser. Those of *Brazil* have all a great Fringe on each side, and have for the most part very much work about 'em, the *Brazilian* Women are so ingenious, that there is scarce two of their Cotton Beds in a hundred, which are brought from the same place, that are made just alike : The *Galibis* paint most of 'em Red, after they are made, and while they are yet upon the Loom. The *Brazilian* Women make scarce any but white Hamocks ; and if they mix either Red, or Blue, or Green, with the White, or all of 'em together (as they do frequently) they work 'em with Thread ready dyed, and so the Men don't touch 'em ; whereas in *Guiana* these Beds are painted only by the Men, the Women leaving this Work to them, when they have finished the Web : They weave 'em after the following Manner, as well in *Brezil* as in *Guiana*. All their Implements are two round Sticks, about 8 or 9 Foot long, and 3 or 4 Inches Diameter ; the two Ends of one of these round Sticks lie a-cross upon two Pieces of Wood, about 8 or 9 Foot from the Ground, more or less, according to the Length the Work-woman is order'd, or designs her self to make her Bed. The other round Stick hangs directly under this, and 'tis to these two round Sticks that the Warp of the Hamock is fasten'd, after which they have a kind of  
Shut-

Shuttle, which they put through the Threads, to weave it after the Manner of our Cloth: But because they put their Shuttle through Thread by Thread, one above and the other below ; this Work is extreamly tedious, and has need of no less Patience than theirs.

Those of *Brazil* having much more work about 'em, require the more Time and Industry to make 'em ; but one sort and another are very much bought in the Islands, where almost all the *Europeans* make use of 'em ; and they are very good to use in *Europe*, especially in those Places, where they have but bad and uncleanly Beds, particularly *Spain* and *Italy*, whither one might carry 'em without much trouble, they being very light ; for the biggest of 'em don't weigh above 5 or 6 Pound, and those of *Brazil* not above half so much, because they are thin and fine ; with 2 Pegs, or 2 great Nails they may be hang'd up any where. The *Indians* place the Props of their Houses at a convenient distance one from another, for this Purpose : They don't go out far into the Country without these Beds ; and there are always enough left in their Houses for Strangers.

This sort of Beds is likewise us'd almost in all Southern *America*, to carry wounded or sick People in ; those that are put to this use,

use, have at each end a great Ring, through which they put a Pole of a sufficient length for the Bed, and strong enough to bear a Man's Weight: And thus two *Indians*, one before and t'other behind, carry the sick Man, supported in his Hamock, by the Pole which they bear upon their Shoulders.

The *Arouagues*, the *Araotes*, and most of the other Nations, toward the River *Orenoque*, make their Beds of the Thread of *Pite*, in Net-work, which they hang up after the Manner the other do their Cotton Hamocks. *Pite* is a kind of Hemp or Flax, but much longer and whiter, of this they make their Cords for the Tackling of the Masts and Sails of their *Canoos*, as for other Occasions; this *Pite* is also much lighter and stronger than Hemp, and nothing near so apt to rot in the Water; they make very fine Thread of it to mend their Arrows, and for other such uses. Perhaps the *Aloe Yuccæ foliis*, *Catal. Plantar. Jamaic. p. 118.*

Note (24) P. 40. *Boucanee* that is, dry'd without being salted, upon a kind of Grate made of Sticks, plac'd about 3 Foot above the Fire, they *Boucanee* Meat as well as Fish; and the Word *Boucaniers* comes from this, because they usually live upon Meat or Fish dress'd after this Manner. This Name was given to the *French* in the Island of *St. Domingo*; because, before they had Houses

Houses, as they now have in the Western Part of the Island, they liv'd only upon Beef thus dress'd; and sold the Hides of the Bulls and Cows, which they kill'd, to the Captains of Ships, for Guns, Powder and Shot, Shirts and Drawers, which was all their Equipage. They were then Vagabonds in the Island, and had no Houses, but now are settled there, and plant a great deal of Tobacco in spite of the *Spaniards*. They are under the Command of the Governour of *la Tortue*, a small Island that lies near *St. Domingo*, on the West-side: And 'tis suppos'd, that the Number of these *Boucaniers* surpasses that of all the rest of the *French* in those *American* Islands, call'd the *Antilles*. These *Boucaniers* have perform'd such surprizing Exploits against the *Spaniards* at *Porto-Velo*, at *Panama*, in *New Spain*, and elsewhere, that what we are told in the Accounts of the Country concerning 'em are almost incredible, but that a *Spaniard* has lately taken care to immortalize their Memory; who has in his own Language given us the History of divers Expeditions of these Adventurers, in a Volume in 4to. Printed at *Cologne*, in the Year 1681, with Figures.

Note (25) P. 43. Monsieur *Fontaine* is Commissary, or Assistant to Monsieur *Fouret*, who has very fine Sugar-Works at *Cayenne*. A

---

---

A  
RELATION  
OF  
G U I A N A,  
AND OF THE  
COMMERCE  
THAT  
May be Settled there.

**G***Uiana* is a great Country, on the Continent of Northern *America*, which extends in Latitude, from the Equinoctial Line, to the Tenth Degree, on the side of the Arctique Pole, and in Longitude from the River of *Amazons* to the *Orenoque*, which contains near Four Hundred Leagues on the Sea-Coasts, with an immense Stretch into the Countries that border upon *Brazil*, on the South-side, and *New Andalousia* on the West.

Our

Our *French* Seamen are wont to call *Guiana* by the Name, of the *North-Cape*, because that is the most remarkable Cape on that Coast; and those that have Business in those Parts, commonly put ashoar there, to get some Knowledge of the Country.

This Cape is between the 2 and 3 Degrees of Northern Latitude, and between the 345 and the 346 Degrees of Longitude. This Part of the Continent is water'd with abundance of Rivers, some of which will carry great Vessels up a considerable Way beyond the Mouths of 'em; and upon the Shoars of 'em; an infinite Number of Plantations might be made, which would turn to a very considerable Account, as well in regard of the Traffick that might be made with the Natives, and the Fishing-Trade that might be carried on in these Rivers, and along the Sea-Coast, as of the Product of the Labour and Industry of the Planters.

The divers Settlements the *French* have made there at different Times, sufficiently prove the Possibility of living in good Correspondence with the *Indians*, provided they be treated civilly; and with more

\* Monsieur de la Barre had not yet made a Settlement there, when this Account was written.

Honesty and Sincerity than \* they have done, who have hitherto had the Conduct of these kind of Enterprizes, fall

fall into their Hands. The ill Treatment the Natives have receiv'd from them, for which they have sometimes made themselves amends by way of Reprizal, have not render'd 'em irreconcilable, as we have been taught by Experience, when we have made tryal of it on different Occasions.

They are tolerably endued with good Sense, which they have opportunity to cultivate and refine by a long Train of Experiences, with which the many Years they live, furnish 'em: For they count a Man dies young, if he don't live above 100 Years.

They have a pretty good Judgment, and have good rational Thoughts, about things within the Compass of their Notice, and within the Reach of the Light of Nature, with which alone they are furnish'd.

They observe their Words with great Exactness, and inviolably practise the Maxim, of not doing to others, what they would not have others do to them.

They are rather inclin'd to Peace than War, which yet they engage in, either when they have some just Quarrel, or when Revenge or Honour prompt 'em to it.

They are sufficiently industrious, and although they have both Patience and Skill in Fishing and Hunting, yet they have the Fore-sight, not to let their Subsistence depend upon Hazard; and therefore willing-

ly cultivate their Ground, in proportion to their Occasions, and the Bigness of their Families.

Before *Europe* had furnish'd them with Tools of Iron and Steel for this Purpose, they made themselves some of hard Stones; but besides that the Labour of making 'em was intolerable, the Pains they took in using of 'em, was also so very great, that they laid aside the use of 'em, as soon as they found they could do more Work in a Day with our Hatchets, Bills and Knives, than they could do in 6 Months with their Stone Tools; which now are good for nothing, but to be kept in the Closets of the Curious, as so many Proofs of the wonderful Patience of those People.

They speak a Tongue, which is not only understood by all the Nations, which the *Spaniards* on one side, and the *Portugese* on the other, have oblig'd to retire into *Guiana*; but is also intelligible to the *Carraibes*, who are the Natives of the *Antilles*, and use this Language: Which I have known by the *Indians* of the Isles of *St. Vincent*, *St. Domingo*, and others where I had occasion to converse with them. In short, this Language is spoken for the Space of above Four Hundred Leagues on the Sea-Coasts, and in many Places above Sixscore Leagues up in the Country.

They



They bring up all sorts of tame Fowl, which they exchange with us for Toys, as well as wild Fowl, and other Game, which is there in great Plenty; as also abundance, both of Sea, and Fresh-water Fish.

They build us Houses after their Fashion, which are commodious enough for the Country; they clear our Ground and carry our Letters, they serve to load and unload Merchant Ships; and in a Word, there's scarce any kind of Service but may be obtain'd of 'em by a courteous Carriage, and by giving 'em a few Trifles of a small Value, when they have occasion for 'em. They undertake even to load Ships entirely with a kind of Fish, which they catch in the Rivers with a sort of Harping-Iron; and this they perform upon such reasonable Terms, that those who follow this Trade by their Means, always find an extraordinary Profit in it; because the Vent of 'em is always speedy and certain in the Islands, where there is a great Consumption of 'em made; so that one may say, this sort of Fish, and the Sea-Tortoise, are the Cod-fish of the Continent, and the *Antego* Islands.

And 'tis the *Manna*, upon which the Colonies between the *Tropiques* live, as much as many of the *Europeans*, and some others, do upon Cod-fish. This Fishing Trade is practis'd all the Year in most of the Ri-

Y 2  
vers

vers on this Coast, except the Fishing for Tortoise, which holds but 3 or 4 Months in the Year; during which, the Females come to lay their Eggs in the Sand, beyond the Marks that are left of the highest Tides, and that in so great abundance, (especially on the Shoars that are least frequented) as can hardly be imagin'd: For 10 Men can turn as many of 'em in a Night, as 100 can dress in a Week.

In the Night, which is the only time they take to lay their Eggs, they wait 'till they have pass'd the Bounds, which the highest Tides have mark'd, and then turn 'em upon their Backs, and being once in this Posture, they can by no means recover themselves upon their Feet to go back into the Sea.

Among the Plants which the *Indians* cultivate in their Plantations, Cotton is one of those that principally employs 'em, especially the Women who make this their particular business; and thus find means to adorn themselves; for they know how to spin it as fine as can be desir'd. And if the disorders that have happen'd in the Colonies upon the Continent, had not hinder'd the Establishing a Regular Traffick of it, which might have been easily accomplish'd; I say, if it had not been for this, all *Europe* might have been furnish'd with it, in all manner of ways in which it could have been

im-

employ'd, without costing the *French* any more trouble or charge in a manner, than that of receiving it; because of the natural and general inclination the *Indians* have both for Work, and for Finery; esteeming a grain of Christal to hang about their Neck or at their Ears, as much as we should do a Diamond of the same bigness.

Besides, it being well known, that Cotton is one of those Commodities that are consum'd the most in *Europe*, and the Price of which is least varied, the Inhabitants of the Islands would never have left off cultivating it, if there had been Women enough to spin it, without which it can't be Transported but with a great deal of Trouble, and little Profit.

The Hamocks or Cotton-beds which the *Indians* sell us for a Bill or Hatchet, are afterwards sold in the Islands with considerable Advantage; every one there having one of 'em, and there are none of them brought from any other Country than *Guiana*, except from *Brasil*, and that but rarely, because of the small Commerce the *French* have there.

Their *Rocon* is a red Die, and valuable when 'tis natural, such as the *Indians* sell us, before it has been falsified by Foreigners, who carry it into *Europe*. See *Urucu in Catal. Plant. Jamaïc. P. 150.*

There

There are to be had among 'em likewise divers sorts of Gumms, Woods, and Roots proper for Physick, which are good Commodities in *France*, as well as several sorts of Wood proper for Dying; and for making of Cabinets and Inlaid Works, among which is the Letter-wood, which the *French* call *Bois de la Chine*, and which grows in no other place in the World but on this part of the Continent. The Natives cut it and carry it in great burthens quite to the Ships so cheap, that a 1000 weight of it comes to but a Crown; whereas that quantity was a long time sold for a 100 Crowns, and never for less than 150 *Livres*.

Besides those Animals that are fit for sport; as *Apes* of divers kinds, *Sapajous*, *Tamarins*, *Sagovius*, *Parrots*, *Arras* and *Tocaus*: I omit a great many other things, which this Country produces; and one may say, this large Compass of Ground has moreover this Advantage above the Islands of *America*, that there is no fear of tiring it; as we are taught by Experience, the Island of *St. Christopher*, and others have been in a little Space of Time, where the Land is become almost barren, meerly by being over-burden'd with continual Crops, because it can never be suffer'd to rest, by Reason of the small Portion of Ground that every Inhabitant possesses; which yet does not hinder

hinder 'em from raising every Year a prodigious Quantity of Sugar, besides Ginger, Indigo, Cassia, and other Commodities that are cultivated and made there.

This Country of *Guiana* is diversified with Hills, Plains and Meadows; and there are scarce any Mountains but would turn to a good Account, if they were manur'd: The Land is every where so fertile, that one Man may easily get, with his own Hands, a Livelihood for Twenty People, the Cultivation of it is so very easie. The Fruits of it are excellent, and very plentiful; and all our sorts of *Corn* grow there all the Year round, without distinction of Seasons, and that in a very little time: And there being no Winter, the Trees are alternately cover'd with Blossoms and Fruits, and always with Leaves.

The Air is very good, and the Climate very Temperate, tho' it be between the *Tropiques*; for the Heat is continually mitigated by a fresh East-wind, which blows all the Year, except in the Night, when the *Breezes* come from the Land, which are only felt one or two Leagues toward the Sea.

The Waters are excellent, and keep good throughout the longest Voyages, as has been often experienc'd in *Europe*, where they are never found to stink at the Return

turn of the Ships, that have taken in their Provision of 'em in this Country. It must not be omitted, that there are on this Coast a great many Islands so proper for the Feeding of Cattle, that provided some necessary Precautions be observ'd, there is no doubt but there would in a short time be as great a Number of 'em produc'd (if a Stock were carried thither) in proportion, as in the other Islands, whither Ships go every Day for Hides; as they do to *St. Domingo*, and elsewhere.

This Account being drawn up only as a Succinct Memoir of *Guiana* in general, and of *Cayenne* in particular; I thought not meet to extend it further, nor to give the Detail of a Country, where the *French* have now a Colony, from whence a more ample Information may be expected.

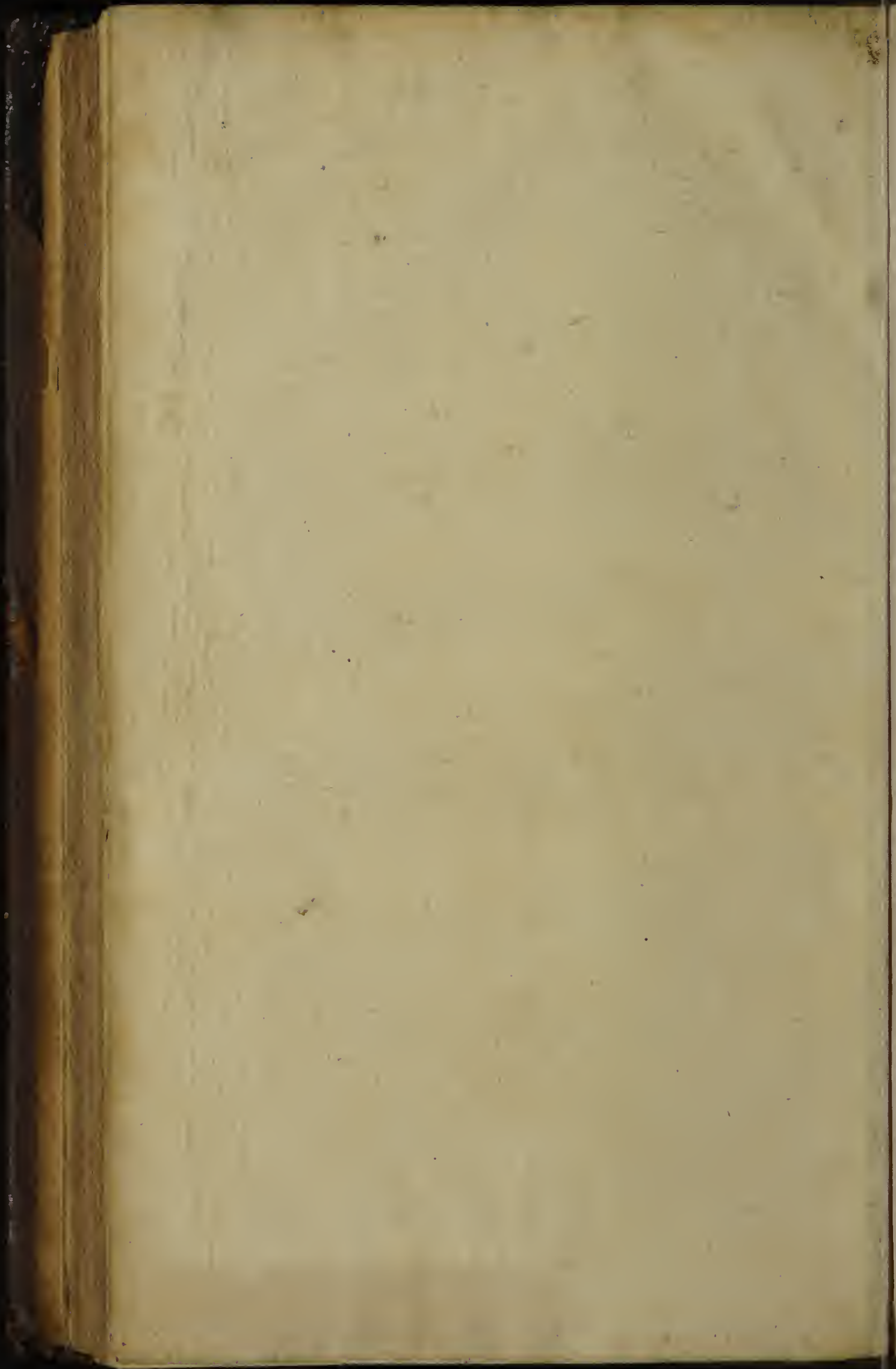
F I N I S.



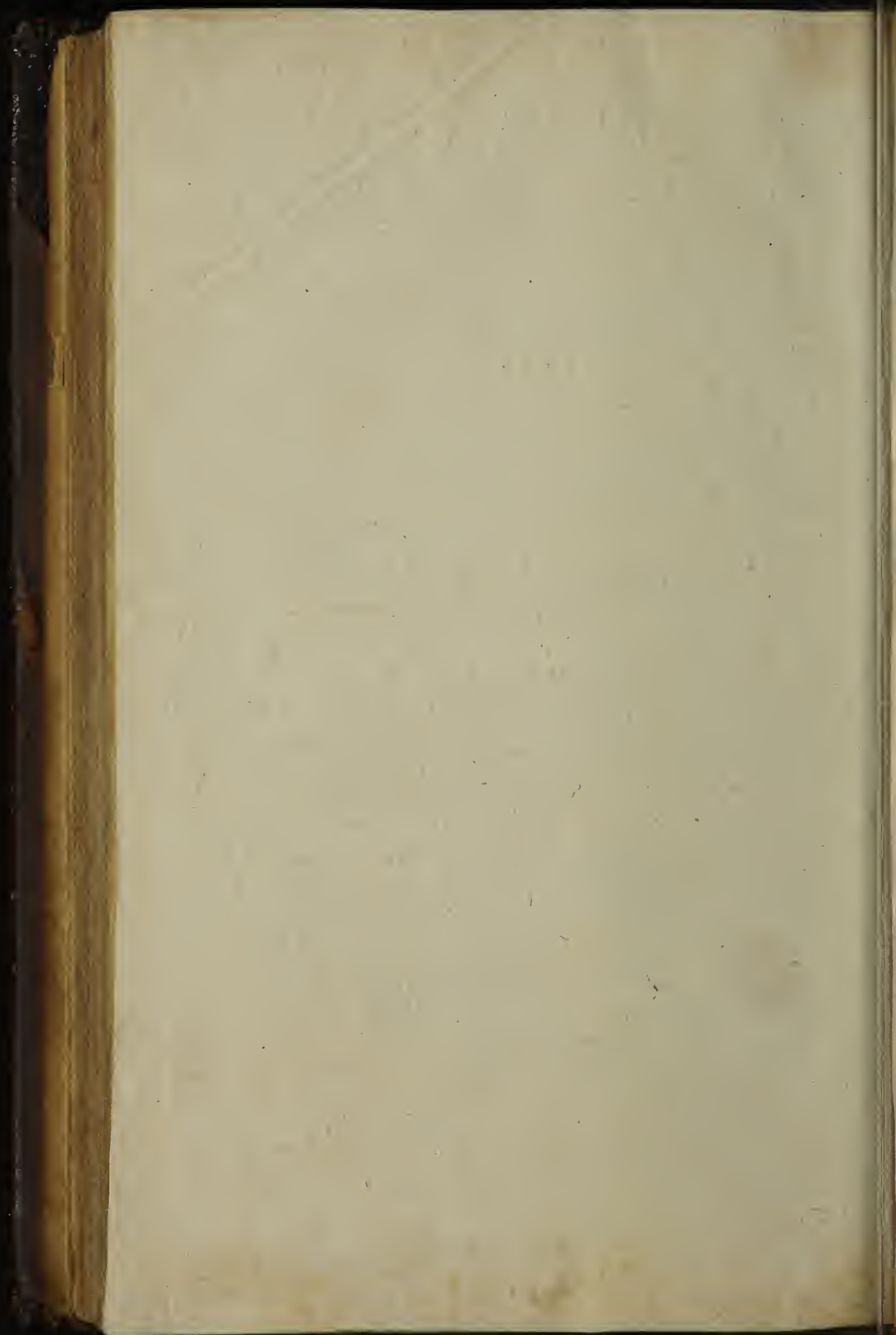
*[The text on this page is extremely faint and illegible due to fading and low contrast. It appears to be a single column of text.]*











94

1844

